

# **Christianity's Second Reformation** **And** **The Rise Of The Scientific Christian**

**By**  
**Reid Collier**

The Christian Church's influence, membership and attendance are in a significant decline, and the schism between Church and Science is a major contributing factor. Traditional Christian fundamentalism has become a repulsive force to the beliefs and preferences of many college educated Americans who thirst for spiritual fulfillment. Furthermore, the life and teachings of Jesus – which are solidly founded upon the fundamental principles of love – are spiritually attractive to all people who seek to have a relationship with their loving Creator. Only before mankind's loving Creator are all human beings created equal. Consequently, the link between democracy, brotherly love, and mankind's spiritual nature has become well established and exceedingly strong. As a result of these social and spiritual forces that have now been set in motion, a modest Second Christian Reformation has quietly and slowly begun. And at the heart of this reformation are the Gospel of Love and the belief in salvation by the sanctification by love. Truly and surely, the Love of God can fill the hearts and soul of all Americans and all the people of the earth, and this happens regardless of a person's religious affiliation, if any. How will the Christian Church respond to this newReformation?

# Christianity's Second Reformation And The Rise Of The Scientific Christian

By  
Reid Collier

Copyright © 2013 by Larry Reid Collier. All rights reserved  
including the right of reproduction in whole or in part, and in any form.

Scripture quotations taken from the New American Standard Bible®,  
Copyright © 1960, 1962, 1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1975, 1977, 1995  
by The Lockman Foundation ([www.Lockman.org](http://www.Lockman.org)). Used by permission.

This book is intended for the person who wants to obtain a new and more powerful perspective of the life and teachings of Jesus Christ. The book challenges long-term, traditional Christian beliefs including the Christian monopolization of spiritual salvation and the suppression of scientific knowledge. The book includes discussions about: (1) the essence and nature of God's love for all His children, (2) the impact democracy has had upon fundamental Christian beliefs, and (3) the extensive consequences which science has had upon traditional, ancient Christian beliefs. The book is based upon the premise that the meaning, value and purpose of life are founded upon the virtues of sentient-love. The word "sentient" is pronounced as "sen-shent," and it means: (1) having power of perception by the senses, and (2) characterized by sensations.

Sentient-love is like a magnificent rainbow which shines with all the colors of life. If the rainbow is missing just one color, then it's not a true rainbow; but instead, it's a conditional and deficient rainbow. This too is the way sentient-love is, for sentient-love must include all the magnificent colors of life. If your love has just one conditional element, then it's missing a color of life. It's emphasized sentient-love is a spiritual element acting in association with hope and faith.. In addition, this book is written from the personal perspective derived from the sincere, honest and objective investigations of science and the critical, intellectual analyses of the rational mind. Lastly, the book is written by a deeply devoted scientific Christian. Consequently, the book is based upon five spiritual beliefs: (1) God is. (2) God is love. (3) God is perfect love. (4) Jesus is Lord. And (5) Jesus is the Lord of Love.

ISBN: 978-1482632668



## **Love is never an accidental occurrence!**

Love is the result of a living process  
associated with an inner personal choice.  
Love requires birth, nurturing and instructions.  
What comes first is a mysterious variable.

For some people love is born as a result  
of the loving examples of parental nurturing.

For some other people love is  
born as a result of intellectual instructions.

And then for some people love is born as a  
result of an unknown source, a truly spiritual mystery.

But for all people who truly love, love is cultivated  
and sustained as a result of an inner personal decision to love.

And that decision to love is delicately  
intertwined with a deeply heartfelt willful desire to love.

Love is then actively nurtured by the daily  
affirmation, commitment and recommitment to love.  
Only in this manner is love always and forever.

What is love? How do you communicate love?  
Are you willing to be an Advocate of Love?  
Let us stop and think, reflect and ponder in the  
pursuit of a factual and meaningful answer.

## **Love's Great Mission**

**To every person in every nation,  
let us teach the principles of love.**

# **Everybody Needs Love!**

Our gracious and benevolent Creator's perfect love is the most incredible, beautiful and awesome spectacle you can possibly behold. It delights the heart, uplifts the spirit, and consoles the weary soul. **And everybody needs love!**

It doesn't matter if you're male or female, or if you're a bigender person or a unigender person. **Everybody needs love!**

It doesn't matter if you're a blue-collar worker, a white-collar worker, or if you work at all, and it certainly doesn't matter if you're rich or poor. Furthermore, it doesn't matter if you're old or young, or if you're in good health or poor health. **Everybody must have love!**

It also doesn't matter what color your skin is or what nationality you are. And it surely doesn't matter if you're beautiful or ordinary, or if you're skinny or obese, or if you're highly intelligent or intellectually challenged. **Everybody still needs to be loved!**

You could be a spiritualist, a religionist, a theist or an atheist, and you could have the mind of a criminal or the mind of an angel. **You still need the beauty and power of love!**

And it surely doesn't matter if you're a Jew, a Muslim, a Hindu, a Buddhist, a Christian, a Baptist, a Methodist, a Catholic, or any other manmade religion, sect or denomination. **Everybody needs love, and that especially includes you and me!**

## **ABOUT THE AUTHOR**

Reid Collier is a daily citizen who is also an Advocate of Love. He is not a counselor, therapist, minister, or any other type of professional soul doctor. Reid has over sixty years of life experiences, and he sincerely desires to help people discover the “real truth” regarding the human experience. He is a very serious, reflective person with a concerned and caring heart. Reid has written ten books and is working on additional books. In his writings he simply expresses his personal reflections in the hope the reader will stop, think, reflect and ponder about what he has written. The reader is then encouraged to finalize what he or she really believes, and thus determine his or hers deep-seated beliefs and paradigms. **A person becomes the manifestation of his or hers paradigms. You are what you believe.** Reid defines himself to be “a facilitator of love;” that is, a person who advocates the exercise of true-love. As a facilitator of love, he tries his best to make the principles of love easier to recognize, to understand and to exercise. Reid writes his books in the manner of one daily citizen talking to another daily citizen. Each book is a one-on-one cordial chat between two friends; and in the end, Reid hopes he and the reader become two good friends. **Love as if your life depends upon it – because it does!**

Note: Additional information about Reid Collier is available on his website called “The Phileo Phoundation”. See Feature #12 “Meet Larry Reid Collier.”

***The Phileo Phoundation***

**Advocate of Brotherly Love**

**Reid Collier, Founder & Sole Proprietor**

**[www.Phileo-Phoundation.com](http://www.Phileo-Phoundation.com)**

## **Books By Reid Collier**

**NOTE:** All books are available from Amazon's subsidiary Create Space. Each book's internet link is provided. See the author's website for additional information regarding each book: [www.Pileo-Phoundation.com](http://www.Pileo-Phoundation.com).

**True-Love's Top Ten Attributes:** 5" by 8" paperback, about 70 pages,  
internet link: [www.createpace.com/4186090](http://www.createpace.com/4186090)

**The Gospel Of Love:** 5" by 8" paperback, about 110 pages,  
internet link: [www.createpace.com/4374168](http://www.createpace.com/4374168)

**Reconciled:** 5" by 8" paperback, about 85 pages,  
internet link: [www.createpace.com/3682048](http://www.createpace.com/3682048)

**Twelve Lessons About True-Love:** 7" by 10" paperback, about 130 pages,  
internet link: [www.createpace.com/3699415](http://www.createpace.com/3699415)

**The Spiritual Nature Of The Sentient Human Being:** 7" by 10" paperback,  
about 150 pages, Internet link: [www.createpace.com/3699410](http://www.createpace.com/3699410)

**Fundamental Principles Of Democracy:** 7" by 10" paperback, about 160 pages,  
Internet link: [www.createpace.com/3699420](http://www.createpace.com/3699420)

**Sixteen Very Important Life-Lessons:** 7" by 10" paperback, about 120 pages,  
Internet link: [www.createpace.com/3699407](http://www.createpace.com/3699407)

**The Law Of Sexual Orientation And Sexual Identity:** 7" by 10" paperback,  
about 135 pages, Internet link: [www.createpace.com/3698214](http://www.createpace.com/3698214)

**Christianity's Second Reformation And The Rise Of The Scientific Christian:**  
7" by 10" paperback, about 260 pages, internet link: [www.createpace.com/4186136](http://www.createpace.com/4186136)

**Cosmic Laws And Concepts That Forge The Human Experience:** 7" by 10"  
paperback, about 200 pages, Internet link: [www.createpace.com/3699424](http://www.createpace.com/3699424)

# **Christianity’s Second Reformation And The Rise Of The Scientific Christian**

## **Table Of Contents**

---

### **Part 1**

#### **Introduction And Concept Overview**

1.1	Forces Forging Christianity’s Second Reformation.....	1
1.2	Paradigms and the Power of Personal Beliefs.....	4
1.3	Preliminary Concepts About Truth and Love.....	10
1.4	Primordial Concepts About Truth and Antitruth.....	11
1.5	Primordial Concepts About Love and Antilove.....	12
1.6	Mankind’s Spiritual and Sentient Nature.....	14

### **Part 2**

#### **Mankind’s Spiritual Nature**

2.1	The First Question of Life.....	15
2.2	The Life Ideology of the Duality of Mankind.....	19
2.3	A Declaration of Mankind’s Spiritual Nature.....	20
2.4	The Public Domain of the Collective’s Spirituality Versus the Private Domain of the Individual’s Religion.....	26
2.5	What Is This Word “God?”.....	29
2.6	Our Spiritual Nature Versus Our Religious Nature.....	41
2.7	The Negative Connotations of Religion and God.....	42

2.8	The Full Meaning of the Word “Religion”.....	43
2.9	The Tyrannical History of Religious Fanaticism.....	45
2.10	Theology, Science and Personal Belief.....	50
2.11	The Love of God Versus the Fear of God.....	52
2.12	The Good and Simple Beauty of Benevolent Religions.....	54

### **Part 3**

## **Mankind’s Sentient Nature**

3.1	You Are a Sentient Human Being.....	56
3.2	Sentient Human Beings and the Meaning of Life.....	60
3.3	Sentient Human Beings and Sentient Freedom.....	68
3.4	The Evolution of Democracy and Jesus’ Teachings.....	73
3.5	Additional Reflections Regarding the Atheist and the Theist.....	81
3.6	Why Do Terrestrial Beings Have to Die?.....	83

### **Part 4**

## **The Innate Scientific And Intellectual Challenges Of The Christian Church**

4.1	The Spiritual Disposition of the American People.....	85
4.2	The Christian Church’s Insensibility And Intractability In a Modern Scientific World.....	86
4.3	Intellectual Challenges Regarding the Christian Bible.....	91
4.4	Christianity’s First Reformation.....	98
4.5	When Church and Science First Collided.....	102
4.6	The Schisms Between Church and Science Widen.....	109

4.7	Today’s Church Versus The True Nature of Homosexual Orientation.....	119
4.8	Christianity’s Second Reformation.....	136
4.9	The Gospel of Love.....	149
4.10	Justification by Faith Versus Sanctification by Love.....	163
4.11	God’s Perfect Love Versus Ancient Mankind’s Fears, Superstitions and Ritual Sacrifices.....	167
4.12	The Holy Trinity, the Unforgivable Sin and Preventive Grace.....	181
4.13	The Three Divisions of the Will of God.....	193
4.14	Why Is Blasphemy Against The Holy Spirit Unforgivable?.....	195
4.15	The Church’s Acceptance of Scientific Christians.....	200

## **Part 5**

### **Associated Spiritual Concepts**

5.1	The Law of Hope.....	201
5.2	The Law of Faith.....	202
5.3	The Law of Love.....	205
5.4	The Law of Reciprocity.....	209
5.5	The Law of Reconciliation.....	213
5.6	The HSG Love Model.....	215
5.7	The SSD Love Model.....	219
5.8	The Model of Antilove.....	223

## **Part 6**

### **A Sincere And Cheerful Farewell**

6.1	Live Life by the Ideology of Love.....	232
6.2	Be a Mighty and Noble Advocate of Love.....	235
6.3	Start a Phileo Study Group.....	237
6.4	An Affectionate Goodbye.....	238

## Part 1

# Introduction And Concept Overview

## 1.1 Forces Forging Christianity's Second Reformation

I sincerely hope the reader finds value and meaning from my personal thoughts and reflections recorded in this book. The book is based upon the proposition that Christianity has been experiencing a gradual, long-term reformation of its fundamental beliefs, doctrines and dogmas. This is Christianity's Second Reformation, and it's occurring in all Christian divisions (Catholic, Eastern Orthodox, Protestant and such). The forces that are forging this reformation are: (1) the evolving Fundamental Principles of Democracy, (2) the evolving fundamental principles of true, sincere and genuine love; that is, "sentient-love," and (3) the rapidly advancing and objective discoveries of science.

1. Democracy's Influence: Some of the sub-elements of Democracy that are involved in the Second Reformation include: (1) The Law of Equality (that is, all sentient human beings are created equal), (2) the expanding tolerance of all religions for all other religions (thus giving rise to the concept of the Great Divinity of Democracy), (3) the expanding acceptance of the true Freedom of Religion (that is, the right to believe in God in accordance with the dictates of one's own conscience), and (4) the recognition that Democracy is derived from the bilateral foundation of brotherly love and theism. Without brotherly love or theism, Democracy would cease to exist.
  - A. The tolerance of all religions must be solidly founded upon the Fundamental Principles of Democracy. This of course is predicated upon the condition that a religion doesn't manifest itself so that it becomes a detriment, degradation or depravation to any other person or groups of persons or upon oneself. While religions actively compete for believers, each religion still knows that if one religion is politically or socially ostracized or restricted, then their religion may also one day fall prey to the prejudices of the government and/or the People. The greatest challenge and threat to American religions is the organized preference and promotion of atheism. People of faith must stand together whenever atheism tries to gain control of the Freedom of Religion.
  - B. The Freedom of Religion is Democracy's greatest freedom. The Freedom of Religion is also the Freedom of Belief; and the Freedom of Belief is ultimately realized to be the Freedom of the Mind. Thereby, the Freedom of the Mind is mankind's greatest freedom, but it's also mankind's greatest

gift, even being a greater gift than life itself. In addition, the principles and beliefs of fascism, communism and all the raw forms of dictatorships weigh heavy on the collective mind of the American People. The Freedom of Religion is always one of the first freedoms lost when an evil despot gains military and political control of his nation.

2. True-Love's Influence: The true ideals of love have always been the heart and soul of Christianity. This has always been true in principle, but Christianity's brutal and bloody history proves its ideals have often been quickly and actively abandoned. This is in spite of the repeated Biblical quotes of Jesus where He emphasizes to "love one another as I have loved you." The apostle Paul also actively addresses the ideals and virtues of sentient-love. "Love is patient. Love is kind. Love never fails." I sense the majority of Christians place the ideals and virtues of love as the most important Christian doctrine. This importance of love is even being placed above the direct, written doctrines of the Christian's New Testament Bible. The world has been readily changing and so has the Christian Church. And realize these two great principles: (1) Ultimately, love isn't everything. It's the only thing. (2) Mankind's Gracious, Benevolent and Loving Creator (our GBLC) loves all His children equally, no matter what their manmade religious affiliation may be, if any.
3. Science's Influence: Our Creator calls all His children to be Truth Seekers. Unfortunately, the objective truths of the Cosmos which science discovers are often adamantly rejected and actively opposed by the Church. Science has historically been feared by the Church because science reveals the superstitious and false beliefs of the Church. If the Bible can be proven to be false in just one place, then the entire Bible becomes suspect of fallacies, and then intellectual skepticism and profound doubt undermines the entire religion. Therefore, all the writings of the Bible must be tenaciously protected from the alleged heresies of the Truth Seekers. This is a profoundly sad situation because the Church's reactions have resulted in the suicide of human intelligence. If mankind is not to use his faculty of intelligence, then why did our GBLC give us the gift of intelligence? And then you have to consider this great question. Who would you prefer to believe: (1) the writings of mankind's ancient-ancient forefathers who adamantly believed the earth was flat and the sun revolved around the earth, or (2) the sincere and diligent Truth Seekers who can repeatedly prove their scientific postulations and observations? Meanwhile, the Truth Seekers must be sensitive to the fragile disposition of the superstitious Christians who sincerely ask this question: If you can't trust and depend upon the Bible, then what can you trust and depend upon? I profoundly believe mankind should never depend upon science, but instead should use science for the benefit and well-being of all mankind. Let us trust in God while we wisely utilize science.

The conflict between Church and Science remains one of mankind's last vestiges to be overcome and reconciled. Only sentient-love has the power to reconcile Church and Science.

It's noted that most Christians do not accept the existence of Christianity's Second Reformation. The more fanatical a Christian is in his or hers religious belief system, then the less likely they are to accept and embrace this Second Reformation. This type of "faith based intolerance" undermines Democracy's five pillars of strength: (1) brotherly love, (2) morality, (3) tolerance, (4) self-discipline, and (5) the will to sacrifice for a greater cause and the greater good. In view of mankind's bloody and ultra selfish history, all citizens of earth must realize the importance and value of Democracy's five pillars. Ultimately, mankind must evolve beyond his current level of spiritual enlightenment. It's also noted that spiritual growth begins by accepting and realizing that religious beliefs are not necessarily Cosmic Truths. Just because a person believes something is true doesn't necessarily mean the belief is true. It's the responsibility of every person of faith to exercise his or hers best ability to discern "uncertain spiritual subjectivity" from "certain factual objectivity." When in doubt then let the Love of God lead you to the truth. Ultimately, all world religions must purge destructive religious fanaticism from their belief systems, or they shall experience a worldwide catastrophic calamity that will make World War II look like children playing.

It's very important to have an understanding of "sentient-love." In its purist sense, sentient-love is the full spectrum of true, sincere, genuine love. Do you remember what sentient means? **The word "sentient" means: (1) having power of perception by the senses, and (2) characterized by sensations.** These sentient senses and sensations are soulful and spiritual in their nature. Consequently, people who reject the spiritual nature of mankind also reject the concept of sentient-love. The only thing worse than believing too much is believing too little. If you don't truly and deeply believe in love, then what is there that's worth believing in? As for me, I adamantly believe in sentient-love, for sentient-love leads you to the mind of Christ. If you truly want to be fulfilled and satisfied in this life and the life-to-come, then choose the path of sentient-love. This book includes various discussions regarding all forms of love. This includes conditional love (pseudo-love), selective love (sentient-love only for one's own kind), and unconditional love (sentient-love).

Now, do you really want to know more about this spiritual movement which I call Christianity's Second Reformation? And do you want to understand how it's changing the heart and soul of Christianity? Do you want to achieve a state-of-being that can perceive and know the Joy of Life? And are you willing to make the commitment that's necessary to learn the fundamental principles that forge this Second Reformation? Do you have the internal motivation to succeed in this Crusade for Sentient-Love. Many aspire but few ascend. Nevertheless, the person who truly wants to grow in love and spirit shall succeed. Now, here's a very good

suggestion that will help the reader complete and understand this book. Form a partnership with family and close friends and read this book together. This will not only help you read and understand the book, but it shall also make your loving bond of friendship much stronger and far more meaningful and joyful. Beyond any doubt, this is what the Joy of Life is all about. May your sentient endeavors lead you to a state of higher enlightenment. HSG to all!

## **1.2 Paradigms and the Power of Personal Beliefs**

---

### **The Pentaquery Belief Principle**

1. What do you believe?
2. Why do you believe it?
3. To what degree can you prove it's true?
4. Are you prepared to revise your beliefs?
5. What do you believe that's worth dying for?

### **The First Paradigm of Life**

#### **Collectively Speaking**

We know very little while we believe very much.

#### **Individually Speaking**

I know very little while I believe very much.

### **The Second Paradigm of Life**

Honest people have honest doubts that create honest questions, and honest questions entail honest uncertainties and honest unbelief.

## **The Truth-Seeker's Methodology**

1. Ensure your beliefs are as objective as possible.
2. Ensure your beliefs are reasonable, sensible, rational and logical.
3. Ensure your beliefs are compatible and consistent.
4. Ensure your beliefs are sincere and genuine.
5. Ensure your beliefs enhance life and not impair life.

Now, here's another great paradigm of life that everyone should know and embrace. **"Know that life is good and beautiful, and therefore, rejoice in life."** But what's a paradigm? My dictionary defines "**paradigm**" as: (1) in grammar, a set of forms all of which contain a particular element, especially the set of all inflected forms based on a single stem or theme; and (2) an example or pattern. Please disregard the first definition. I've never even heard of paradigm being associated with grammar, and having "inflected forms" makes it sound like it needs medical attention. Back in my old school days, grammar always made me ill. Synonyms for the word "**paradigm**" include "model, mold, ideal, standard, and paragon." Obviously, the best definition for my intentional use of the word "paradigm" is "an example or pattern." But this definition is still lacking my intent. Notice the synonyms better define my intentional use of the word "paradigm." Especially note the synonyms "model" and "paragon." To my surprise, the word "ideal" is also included. Just for the record, the word "**paragon**" means: (1) a model or pattern of excellence; and (2) of a particular excellence. Everyone needs a paragon of paradigms. My personal definition for the word "**paradigm**" is "a person's deep-seated beliefs, whereby the collective set of the person's paradigms become the basis to live one's life." You literally live and die by the virtue of your paradigms. As a result of my personal reflections, I have come to believe the first two paradigms of life are as follows.

It has been consistently proven life can be lived joyfully and triumphantly no matter what your life circumstances may be. But I know this is very difficult to believe when there's so much hardship, pain, suffering and misery in this world. The human body, mind and soul are extremely fragile, thus exposing the human

experience to hardships and misery. In spite of life's dark side, you must first see life's simple goodness and beauty. The truth is you must have a positive and optimistic disposition if you want to overcome life's hardships and misery. This principle of life is reflected in the composite of your paradigms, which in turn forms your frame of mind. This is called "**your life-principle.**" I define "**life-principle**" as "the deep-seated inner core of a person's beliefs and convictions, and which provide the basis for living one's life." Your life-principle is also called the "convictions of your heart," and the convictions of your heart are the collective paradigms of your inner being. Paradigms, life-principle, and the convictions of your heart are synonymous. Meanwhile, always remember this. **You are the manifestation of your deep-seated beliefs and paradigms.**

## **Paradigms and the Person's Inner Being**

Now, what's this element we call "**the inner being?**" Some people call mankind's inner being the heart of man, or the human heart, or the soul, or the spirit. I personally prefer to use the phrase "the heart of man," but I also like the phrase "**the human psyche.**" The word "psyche" is the ancient Greek word for "soul." From the perspective of psychoanalysis, the psyche is defined as "the mental or psychological structure of a person, especially as a motive force." Here's another ambiguous phrase "motive force". For me personally, the word "motive" as used in the phrase "**motive force**" means "something that prompts a person to act in a certain way or that determines volition." Holy macaroni! Here's that word again, "volition." Another psychological phrase for the inner being is "**the psychic apparatus.**" Have you ever thought of yourself as an apparatus, especially a psychic apparatus? I believe a better phrase for "the psychic apparatus" is "**the psychic entity.**" Are you self-aware of your "inner entity?" Finally, no human being really knows the difference between the human heart, the human soul, the human spirit, and the psychic entity. The soul and spirit remain great mysteries, and for some people they're more a function of faith than a matter of objective truth. As a personal standard writing convention, whenever I use the words "soul" or "spirit", or the phrases "the heart of man," "the human psyche," or "the psychic entity," then I'm addressing the sentient human being which is the person's spiritual essence.

Your paradigms are the essence of your inner belief system, thus creating your frame of mind; or in other words, your mind-set. In turn, your attitudes are then derived from your mind-set. These include positive attitudes as well as negative attitudes; or in other words, attitudes of love versus attitudes of animosity. Now, here's a really important truth to remember about paradigms and attitude. If you want to change an attitude, then you must first change a paradigm. Have you ever heard of the phrase "paradigm shift?" A paradigm shift creates a change in attitude. Furthermore, your personal paradigms form the foundation upon which

you build your models of love and life. And your models of love and life define the person you truly are. Ultimately, you are what you believe. If you want to be the person you truly desire to be, then you must first determine what you sincerely and deeply believe. Let there be no doubt in your mind. You are the manifestations of your inner beliefs – for your inner beliefs become your thoughts, your words, your actions, and your character. And character is everything! Never forget this great and important truth. **You are what you believe.**

## **The Ideology of Love, Its Idea, and Its Ideal**

The word “**ideology**” literally means “the study of ideas.” “**The Ideology of Love**” literally means “the study of the ideas of love.” As a formal definition, the word “**ideology**” means “the body of doctrine of a social movement, institution or large group, and often in reference to a cultural or political plan.” For the Ideology of Love, “the body of doctrine” is the composite of beliefs regarding the principles of love. Accordingly, an ideology is a collection of beliefs; or in other words, a collection of paradigms. For the Ideology of Love, “the social movement” is mankind’s collective desire for all citizens to consistently exercise the principles of love. Various cultures, groups, subgroups, and political systems have multiple ideologies, whereby opposing ideologies may compete and conflict with one another. The competition of ideologies occurs between individuals as well as between special interest groups, political parties, and even nations. The violent history of mankind is largely due to fanatical ideologies that violently oppress and attack competing ideologies. In fact, the violent competition between opposing ideologies continues to be mankind’s worst nightmare. Even The Ideology of Love is in constant competition with opposing ideologies, and I’m trying to convince mankind to choose The Ideology of Love. I do this because I deeply believe only the consistent exercise of love provides the maximum good for the maximum number of people. Where love rules, prosperity follows. What do you deeply believe in? What is the ideology that governs your personal life?

Associated with the word “ideology” are the words “idea” and “ideal.” The word “idea” means “any conception existing in the mind as a result of mental contemplation, reflection, awareness, understanding, or other similar activity.” The “idea of love” literally means “the conception of the awareness and understanding of the elementary principles of love.” Also, realize this means that every personal belief is also a personal idea. The word “idea” is also related to the word “ideal,” where the word “ideal” is defined as “a conception of something in its perfection.” Accordingly, an “ideal paradigm” means “a perfect paradigm.” It’s noted all good and loving people live life by their ideal paradigms. Accordingly, TSG Love is not just an ideal paradigm, but it’s also a perfect paradigm. But of course, no sentient human being is perfect. We are imperfect people living in an imperfect world, thus making everyone in need of mercy, forgiveness, reconciliation and redemption.

Nonetheless, a good and loving person lives life by the ideal paradigms that are solidly secured within one's heart. Accordingly, "ideal love" may not be perfect in its human exercise, but it's perfect in its ideal conception. I believe this is reflective of love's spiritual nature and its connection to our ethereal world. The sentient human being is far more than mankind's animalistic nature and physiological drives. We are first and foremost spiritual entities with an ethereal nature.

## **Paradigms and Good, Moral Character**

When you stop and ponder about your personal life experiences then you realize there are external life forces that forge your personal life experiences. Upon further contemplations you become aware these personal life experiences provide the basis for your personal perspectives of life. Now, realize this great truth. Your personal perspectives of life forge your deep-seated beliefs and paradigms that become manifested into your thoughts, your words, and your deeds. This is a reflection of your inner personhood, which is readily known and understood by your loving Creator. It's also very important to know sentient human beings cannot conceal lies or deceptions from their omniscient Creator. Now, your words and deeds also define the essence and nature of your character. As a result, you are what you believe. This is a reflection of your outer personhood, which is readily known and understood by your fellow sentient human beings. Here's a very important question to consider. Does your outer personhood match your inner personhood? Are you "true to yourself," or are you a loathsome hypocrite?

Be sure to grasp the extreme subjectivity of the phrase "personal life experiences." It's self-evident that all personal perspectives of life are saturated with personal subjectivity. This is why no two people believe and think exactly alike. There are always some variations of personal perspectives of life. Such variations range from very minor differences to very major differences. Sometimes these differences can even be diametrically opposing differences which may ultimately lead to physical confrontation. Too often the evil ethereal forces of belligerent animosity conquer the sentient mind. Have you ever had your mind emotionally hijacked, whereby you say things and do things that you eventually regret? The difficulties and frustrations of life can make any person's "mind snap." Truly, life is a difficult struggle. And for people with a sentient disability, life's struggles can be very challenging. Nevertheless, each individual person is responsible for the person they become. You are responsible for your own character and the person you are.

Now, what are the ethereal elements that cause the differences between personal perspectives of life? Truly and surely, some perspectives of life are founded upon truth and righteousness while other perspectives of life are founded upon falsehoods and distortions, and sometimes outright, bold, black lies and

intentional deceptions. All too often a person selfishly believes what he or she wants to believe even though their beliefs are unjustly detrimental to other people. The objective truth is self-evident to a healthy sentient mind, but the disabled sentient mind creates suffering and misery to innocent victims as well as themselves. Could this difference of mentality be the source for the dichotomy of good and evil? As an example, malicious murder is objectively self-evident to be an evil and unrighteous act. But what is the murderer's thought process that leads the murderer to commit such a dastardly act? What motivates a murderer, and why did the murderer allow his character become an agent of life's dark side? On the other hand, why does a good and noble person choose to pursue truth and to exercise love?

In reflections of this great dichotomy, I've come to believe the understanding of the MVP of Life is founded upon two basic principles: (1) the true, sincere and genuine pursuit of The Cosmic Truth; and (2) the true, sincere and genuine acceptance of The Cosmic Truth. Too many people refuse to believe The Cosmic Truth in spite of its objective self-evidence. Subsequently, they live life in a state of self-denial. I should also note that it's highly obvious and self-evident that The Cosmic Truth is not always objective or self-evident. On the other hand, there are times and conditions when The Cosmic Truth is objective and self-evident, such as in the case of malicious murder. Where objectivity ends and subjectivity begins can be very difficult to discern and is often a source of hot, contentious arguments. And such arguments are usually the result of diametrically opposing ideologies. Lastly, you have to wonder if a sentient mind is subject to sentient damage, thus creating a defective and dysfunctional sentient human being. As an example, what drives a person to be a mass murderer, a serial killer, a vicious rapist, a malevolent pedophile, or any other form of sadistic degradation and depravation? Are they beyond help, cure and reconciliation? Surely, these sentiently defective persons are the reprobates of society.

I truly wish terrestrial life was free of the natural physical and sentient defects that plague mankind. This may not totally eliminate evil, but it would go a long way to negating a significant portion of the effects of evil. Meanwhile, each child of humanity must face the great challenges and difficulties of life. But you don't have to face the difficulties of life alone. We must work together to help nullify the powers of evil and to promote the development of good character. We need all the good, righteous, moral, tolerant and loving sentient human beings which the Children of Humanity can muster. And we must always provide a living hope that every person has the ability to overcome all of their disadvantages which the terrestrial life has dealt them. This is the power of the pursuit of truth and the exercise of love. Let this great paradigm be the basis for the development of your character. By embracing this loving paradigm, then you'll never allow the negative elements of life be the forces that forge your character.

## **1.3 Preliminary Concepts About Truth and Love**

---

This book is about **the pursuit of truth** which leads to the understanding of Christianity's Second Reformation. I'm talking about the "real truth" which I call "**The Cosmic Truth.**" Theology is as complex and confusing as it's desirable and powerful. Subsequently, discerning The Cosmic Truth about the Second Reformation is a significant challenge. What is The Cosmic Truth about spiritual growth and understanding, and how do I convince you I know this great truth? For myself, I know the path of truth is paved with critical doubt, and all my assertions are but reasons to doubt me. How do you discern the difference between the biased and self-serving opinions of a self-deceived demagogue versus the wise and truthful counsel of a noble sage? History has proven demagogues can appear to be very wise, sincere and convincing in the short-term; but in the long-term these demagogues lead their followers to their doom. Ultimately, you must seek The Cosmic Truth for yourself, actively seeking the long-term effects as well as the short-term effects. For my own part, I only promise you the sincerity of my love and the gentle convictions of my heart. Meanwhile, I believe you'll find great value in what I have to share.

In your personal endeavor to pursue and find The Cosmic Truth – that is, the real truth and nothing but the truth, the so help you God truth – I only ask one thing of you. In the intentional process of finalizing your beliefs, exercise The Truth-Seeker's Methodology. This methodology was first mentioned in Section 1.2 titled "Paradigms and the Power of Personal Beliefs." The Truth-Seeker's Methodology is provided again for the reader's convenience.

### **The Truth-Seeker's Methodology**

1. Ensure your beliefs are as objective as possible.
2. Ensure your beliefs are reasonable, sensible, rational and logical.
3. Ensure your beliefs are compatible and consistent.
4. Ensure your beliefs are sincere and genuine.
5. Ensure your beliefs enhance life and not impair life.

Please read and ponder carefully what I share with you. After all, it just might bring meaning, understanding and happiness into your life. And it just might bring peace, order and harmony into an otherwise chaotic existence. So, if you're truly willing, then prepare yourself for serious reflections. To understand love and life you must first stop and think, reflect and ponder. Remember the Wiseman who warned us: "An unexamined life is not worth living." Life is not easy, and if you want to understand the meaning, value and purpose of life, then you must discipline yourself for The Great Quest for Understanding. Commit your mind and spirit to the challenging quest of uncovering love's fundamental principles and to understanding life's meaning, value and purpose. This is truly a journey of the soul, thus reflecting the essence of your inner person, your inner spiritual yearnings, and your ethereal nature. Herein now, let us begin the journey. Ponder and reflect wisely upon the following reflections about Christianity's Second Reformation. But before we proceed, there are some fundamental concepts that first need to be addressed and understood. In a very general manner, these concepts include human attributes such as: (1) faith and belief, (2) skepticism, doubt, uncertainty, (3) wisdom, love and kindness, (4) truth, reason and objective knowledge versus subjective beliefs, and (5) goodness, righteousness and conviction.

## **1.4 Primordial Concepts About Truth and Antitruth**

**Truth**: The truth shall set you free. Truth is a verifiable and indisputable fact, idea, ideal, principle, concept, condition, experience, or other similar state of reality, thus revealing the Realities of Reality of the Cosmos. By personal convention, I use the phrase "**The Cosmic Truth**" to designate "**that which is truly-true.**" Those who pursue the truth and embrace the truth to the best of their ability are known as "the People of the Truth."

**Antitruth**: The antitruth shall enslave you. **That which is "not-true" is called antitruth.** Antitruth can be either a direct opposite of truth or an indirect opposite of truth. Antitruth is also the distortion of truth, the deviation of truth, the opposition to truth, and the contrast of truth. Antitruth conceals the Realities of Reality. Those who evade the truth, distort the truth, or deviate from the truth are known as "the People of the Lie."

First, I want to explain the meaning of the word “primordial” as I’m now using it. The word “**primordial**” means: “constituting a beginning; giving origin to something derived or developed; original; and elementary.” All lessons about life should always begin with a deep-seated and heartfelt desire to know all original and elementary truths about life. In other words, the meaning, value and purpose of life begin with the sincere and internalized desire to know The Cosmic Truth. The Cosmic Truth is out there somewhere, and as a sentient human being, it’s your personal responsibility to find it. Seek and you shall find. Furthermore, truth can be objective or subjective, and can occur in many shades of gray. The personal perceptions of truth can be as variable as the waves upon the oceans. In spite of the immense difficulties of “truth-seeking,” sentient human beings have consistently and reverently sought that which mankind calls “self-evident truths.” But beware! Some people are willing to die for what they personally perceive to be The Cosmic Truth, even if you personally perceive this “so called Cosmic Truth” to be Cosmic Antitruth. This we know for sure. Properly perceiving The Cosmic Truth, especially “The Cosmic Spiritual Truth,” is the greatest challenge of the human experience. Emphatically speaking, you must consistently discern truth and antitruth in order to live a happy, joyful and fulfilling life.

Antitruth is the antithesis of truth.” The word “**antithesis**” means “opposition; contrast; the direct opposite.” In addition, antitruth has a twin brother whose name is “Hypocrisy.” Hypocrisy is the personification of a living lie. In addition, antitruth may occur intentionally or unintentionally. Consequently, the truth-seeker must wield a two edge sword – one edge to wisely discern and embrace the truth and the other edge to defend against the deceit and foolishness of antitruth. And of course, antitruth is most devastating when it’s intentionally used in a malicious and malevolent manner.

## **1.5 Primordial Concepts About Love and Antilove**

**Love**: As a basic perspective, **love** is the active concern for the well-being of another person, or corporeal entity, or celestial entity, thus demonstrating the lover’s embracing affirmation of life and creation. Love is always active in its nature. There’s no such thing as passive love. The corporeal entity includes animals, especially pets. The celestial entity includes mankind’s Creator and loved ones who have already departed earth and entered the world-to-come. By personal convention, I use the phrase “**Cosmic Love**” to designate “true, sincere and genuine love,” which I also abbreviated as “TSG Love.”

**Antilove**: As a basic perspective, antilove is the passive or active degradation or depravation of the well-being of another person, or corporeal entity, or celestial entity, thus demonstrating the antilover's rejection and assault upon life and creation. Note that antilove can be either passive or active.

The happiness, joy and fulfillment of life begin with the sincere, internalized desire to love. Love is never an accidental occurrence. Truly, love is the very basis of all that's good and beautiful in our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator's Cosmos. In our Cosmos there is "love," but there is also "that which is not-love." **That which is "not-love" is called "antilove."** Antilove is also "the antithesis of love." In their foundational forms, love is selflessness while antilove is selfishness. Antilove is also synonymous with fear. Antilove is fear, and fear is antilove. An enlightened heart filled with genuine love is easy to discern because it's consistently patient and kind while it actively pursues peaceful harmony. A black heart filled with antilove is easy to discern because it's consistently impatient and mean while it aggressively creates discord and distress. It's also noted the heart of love is free-will while the heart of antilove is domination and the lust for social power. Even a passive antilover seeks to dominate, control and command other people. It's also very important to realize you must understand the concepts of antilove in order to better understand the concepts of sentient-love.

While the intent of love always focuses upon the well-being of another person, antilove creates the "**degradation**" and "**depravation**" of another person. I define "**degradation**" as: the act of reducing or lowering in character or quality. I define "**depravation**" as: the act of making something bad or worse, or the act of corrupting. In addition, both love and antilove are exercised consciously and subconsciously. A person may not be aware when they exercise love versus antilove. And of course, love and antilove are also subjectively perceived by the person who is the object of affection (in the case of love) or the object of animosity (in the case of antilove). The consequences of love can range from insignificant to cosmically important while the consequences of antilove can range from insignificant to cosmically devastating. Emphatically speaking, you must discern love and antilove in order to live a Life of Joy.

Everyone exercises love and antilove. The greatest and wisest lover will have a moment of weakness at which point an act of antilove falls upon another person, even a person who is deeply loved. Fatigue makes antilovers of us all, and a physical illness or a condition of non-wellness (such as a cold, a headache, or the discomforts of a woman's menstrual cycle) makes everyone prone to antilove. We're all imperfect human beings, and everyone is subject to the weaknesses of the terrestrial body and mind. Thus, everyone needs mercy, forgiveness, redemption

and reconciliation. Sincere, genuine love provides understanding that quickly leads to mercy and forgiveness. The truth is everyone needs to love, and everyone needs to be loved. This includes even the most notorious antilovers. However, antilovers exercise limited acts of genuine love. Antilovers exercise acts of conditional love and selective love, but nevertheless, antilovers can sincerely exercise true, genuine love that focuses upon the well-being of the person loved. Now, here's the point to consider. What ethereal force dominates your life, the ethereal force of love or the ethereal force of antilove? What is your reflective answer? And is your answer the same as those people who are an active part of your life?

## **1.6 Mankind's Spiritual and Sentient Nature**

As a result of my sincere reflections, I have come to believe all manmade religions have a similar spiritual foundation. This common foundation provides a spiritual bond between all religions. This may be a weak bond, but it remains to be a hopeful bond no matter what. For the people of faith, it's far, far better to be a squabbling cluster of theists than a unified organization of atheists. All that's required to maintain this "theistic bond" is a little bit of loving tolerance and the acceptance that our GBLC loves all His earthly children equally, thus reflecting the democratic Law of Equality. Let it also be clear that theists are called by their Creator to love atheists as well as theists. Nevertheless, I do despise the Ideology of Atheism. The Ideology of Theism leads to a state of hope while the Ideology of Atheism leads to a state of despair. In view of mankind's theistic bond, it's very important to understand the fundamental elements of mankind's spirituality. Consequently, let us first consider mankind's common foundation of spirituality.

Truly and surely, there are many concepts and details of love and life that must be uncovered, recognized, evaluated, analyzed, and determined if they're the truth. If they are the truth, then they must be accepted and embraced. And hopefully we'll eventually learn if these "believed truths" are The Cosmic Truth. In a similar manner we must also uncover, recognized, evaluated, analyzed, and determined if we diligently and consistently exercise sentient-love. Note that truth and love are impossible to separate. From my personal journey in the pursuit of truth and love, I've learned this great paradigm: **"Truth and love resonate within the spirit and soul, providing comfort and sanctuary, meaning and value, purpose and understanding, and most importantly, personal happiness, satisfaction and fulfillment."** But of course, this paradigm can only be embraced if you first believe you have a spirit and a soul. Do you personally believe you have a spirit and a soul?

## Part 2

# Mankind's Spiritual Nature

## 2.1 The First Question of Life

---

Take a moment and reflect upon the most basic and fundamental element of life. This reflection is actually the first crossroads of life's challenging journey, and it leads you to the first question of life. With a deep and soulful reflection, what do you think is the First Question of Life? Based upon my soulful reflections, here is my personal First Question of Life.

### The First Question of Life

Is there a spiritual realm to life?

Your personal paradigms are intrinsically linked to your personal answer to the First Question of Life. Furthermore, your personal answer is based upon your personal beliefs, and not upon your personal knowledge. Meanwhile, mankind's collective answer to the First Question of Life divides the world into two groups – the spiritualist and the non-spiritualist. However, I personally prefer to identify these two groups as **celestians** and **terrestrials**. Here's a brief overview of these two groups.

### A General Description of Celestians

This discussion concerns the simple, general attributes of the celestian. However, it's noted there are righteous, moral celestians, and there are also unrighteous, immoral celestians. And I should also note that it can be very difficult to discern the righteous, moral celestians from the unrighteous, immoral celestians. But this we know for sure. Sentient-love abides in the heart of the righteous, moral celestian while pseudo-love abides in the heart of the unrighteous, immoral celestian.

A “celestial” is a person who believes in the celestial element of life. The word “**celestial**” means “pertaining to the spiritual.” Accordingly, a celestial adamantly believes life has a spiritual realm which is associated with mankind’s Creator, heaven and the afterlife. The human concepts of God, heaven and the afterlife vary greatly, and the individual beliefs of how one becomes a heaven dweller can be a degradation and depravation upon others. Just remember, this is a simple, general discussion of the righteous, moral celestial. Celestians are theists who trust in mankind’s Creator, believe mankind is created as an act of an intelligent design by the Creator, believe mankind is subject to Divine Law, and believe all sentient human beings are created equal – this being a self-evident truth. Celestians are known as the Children of Hope, the People of Faith, and rainbow dwellers. Celestians are also associated with the ethereal elements of hope, faith and love. As a celestial, you’re never alone and isolated within the massive, cold and lonely Cosmos. A celestial always has the graceful, benevolent and loving companionship of the Divine Spirit; that is, the Holy Mother Spirit. Celestians believe life is a personal gift from their Creator, and each individual is personally responsible and accountable for the returned value of the Creator’s gift. **The essence of sentient life is the Creator’s gift to you. Your decision to be an Advocate of Love is your gift to the Creator.**

Now, here’s a celestial element that should be exceedingly clear. While all religionists are spiritualists, not all spiritualists are religionists. There are no requirements that a celestial has to be affiliated with a world religion and any of their beliefs, doctrines and dogmas. In addition, a person who professes to be a celestial may or may not be loving, moral, tolerant and self-disciplined. Just because a person believes mankind has a Creator doesn’t guarantee the person abides in love; that is, sentient-love. You must always be aware of religious celestians who are unrighteous and immoral. Mankind’s history contains many chapters of sad and bloody stories of loveless celestians who literally created hell on earth. Always beware of the violent fanatic, but especially beware of the violent religious fanatic. It’s also noted mankind’s history contains many stories of celestians who lived their entire lives in loving service to their Creator and their fellow sentient human beings. Lastly, the celestial has five important Questions of Life.

### **The Celestian's First Five Questions Of Life**

1. Is there a spiritual realm to life? (The answer is “yes” by proposition.)
2. Does mankind really have a Creator?
3. Is mankind's Creator the manifestation of love, thereby loving all His children, including His wayward children as well as His obedient children?
4. Do you truly, sincerely and genuinely love your Creator and your fellow sentient human beings?
5. Where will your mind dwell at your moment of your physical death?

### **A General Description of Terrestrians**

This discussion concerns the simple, general attributes of the terrestrial. However, it's noted there are righteous, moral terrestrians, and there are also unrighteous, immoral terrestrians. And I should also note that it can be very difficult to discern the righteous, moral terrestrians from the unrighteous, immoral terrestrians. But this we know for sure. Sentient-love abides in the heart of the righteous, moral terrestrial while pseudo-love abides in the heart of the unrighteous, immoral terrestrial.

A “terrestrial” is a person who believes only in the terrestrial element of life. The word “**terrestrial**” means “pertaining to the earth.” Accordingly, a terrestrial adamantly believes there is no spiritual realm to life, no heaven, no Divine Creator, and no afterlife. Thus, terrestrians are non-spiritualists and atheists. Terrestrians trust in mankind's secular nature, believe mankind is created as an act of evolutionary chance, believe mankind is subject only to man-made laws, and believe all human beings are created in a state of inequality – this being a self-evident truth. For terrestrians, the earthly experience defines the beginning and the end of consciousness, the human experience, and human life. Mankind's ultimate state is oblivion. Terrestrians are also known as the Children of Despair, People of Dust, and dust dwellers. While most terrestrians believe in some aspects of hope, faith and love, they reject the ethereal nature of these magnificent spiritual

elements. The word “ethereal” does not exist in the terrestrial dictionary. As a terrestrial, you’re ultimately alone and isolated within the massive, cold and lonely Cosmos. Lastly, the terrestrial has three important Questions of Life.

### **The Terrestrials’s First Three Questions Of Life**

1. Is there a spiritual realm to life? (The answer is “no” by proposition.)
2. Do you truly, sincerely and genuinely love your fellow sentient human beings?
3. Where will your mind dwell at your moment of your physical death?

### **Celestians Versus Terrestrials**

The distinction between celestians and terrestrials is obviously simple, but it’s also very profound. In addition, there should be no personal judgment regarding another person’s answer to the First Question of Life. Your personal answer is nothing more than your personal belief, thus making celestians and terrestrials believers in their respective faith system. Truly and surely, terrestrials live life by faith, even though terrestrials don’t perceive faith in the same manner as celestians perceive faith. Terrestrials live life by their faith in the doctrine of oblivion. Now, be sure to realize this great truth. Love favors neither the celestian nor the terrestrial, but provides equal opportunity for both types of believers. Furthermore, if you truly love your fellow sentient human beings, then you readily exercise the fruits of TSG Love, especially including brotherly love, morality, tolerance and self-discipline. And I personally prefer to deal with a terrestrial who is a sentient-lover than a celestian who exercise negative, conactive love. This especially includes violent religious fanatics who gleefully murder their fellow sentient human beings. But overall, I highly prefer the company of other celestians who consistently exercise love. You always gravitate to those people who have a belief system that’s similar to your own belief system.

As already defined, I'm deeply and profoundly convinced there is a spiritual realm to life. Consequently, I'm totally biased from the celestial's perspective. Your similar contemplative reflections will lead you to the development of your personal model of God, but you can only have a model of God if you're a celestial. Nevertheless, I'm deeply convinced the nature and power of love is profoundly important to all people. Love has deep meaning and value for celestians and terrestrians. Love is real. Love is powerful. Love is now. Love is for everyone. And only love provides sanctuary in our cold and hostile world. Beyond any doubt in my mind, only love can provide light and warmth in the world of sentient existence.

## **2.2 The Life Ideology of the Duality of Mankind**

The terrestrial and celestial natures of mankind are also addressed by the Life Ideology of the Duality of Mankind. This Life Ideology adamantly believes in the dual essence of human beings, whereby human beings have a spiritual, ethereal essence and a physical, biological essence. The spiritual essence is called the spirit, the soul, or the heart of man. The science of psychology also calls it "**the psychic apparatus**," but I prefer to call it "**the psychic entity**." Accordingly, the psychic entity is symbiotically integrated with the physical body, which is also called "**the corporeal apparatus**". Fairly recently the corporeal apparatus has also been called "**the avatar**," although this use of avatar is not the original meaning of the word. Avatar is an ancient Indian word, and it's an important element of Hinduism and Sikhism. In Hinduism, avatar is a divine being who takes on a physical body and descends to earth. From a Hindu perspective, Jesus was an avatar. Sikhism uses the word avatar to represent any soul descending to earth. The use of the avatar as representing the physical body is a recent American pop culture usage. Have you ever thought about your body being an avatar? Associated with this ideology is the deep-seated belief that the physical body dies but the psychic entity continues to live to some extent, in some manner, and under conditions that are established by mankind's Creator. Mankind's religious beliefs of the afterlife vary greatly and are often the subject of hot and intense personal religious debates. To the best of my knowledge, all world religions are based upon the Duality of Mankind. I've also read Mankind's Duality is believed and embraced by over 90 percent of the world's population. I believe it's a self-evident truth that the Life Ideology of Mankind's Duality is an element of mankind's public, spiritual nature; and it is not a doctrine or dogma of one's personal, private religion. However, not all Americans agree with me and some Americans actively pursue the Life Ideology of the Singularity of Mankind.

Now, here's my personal concern regarding the disbelief of the duality of mankind. Beginning in the early 1960's, there has been an active, national, well organized, and highly effective atheistic movement which pursues to eradicate all

spiritual association between the State and the Public Domain of Mankind's Spirituality. These atheists are also called secular humanists, or simply humanists. For these humanists, even the use of the word "God" in any public form that's associated with the State (including our public schools) has been attacked as being a religious matter. Therefore, the humanists adamantly believe the State's use of the word "God" is a violation of the constitutional law that is defined as the Separation of Church and State. Spiritual phrases such as "one Nation under God" and "in God we trust" are being attacked as religious doctrine and dogma.

In reflection, let me make one very important point crystal clear. I truly believe the vast majority of America's humanists are good, moral, tolerant and loving people, which also makes them very good American citizens. And of course they have the democratic right and privilege to believe God does not exist and to promote the deep-felt atheistic beliefs of their inner being. Nevertheless, the Ideology of America's Spirituality and the Ideology of Atheism and Humanism are diametrically opposing. One ideology, representing the People's Majority, shall be the Law of the Land; and the other ideology, representing the People's Minority, shall be respectfully suppressed. Unfortunately for the dissenters, this is how American Democracy works. For the sake of the Nation – for the short-term and especially for the long-term – let's make sure the People's adamant belief in the living reality of mankind's loving Creator prevails.

Meanwhile, nothing concerns me more for the well-being of America than the fear of losing the spirituality of America, and especially losing the State's long-term recognition of mankind's spirituality. Therefore, we as a Nation and as a State must understand the profound and important difference between the Natural Order of mankind's public, collective spirituality versus the Natural Order of the citizen's private and personal religion. In response to my concerns, I must proclaim "**A Declaration Of Mankind's Spiritual Nature.**"

## **2.3 A Declaration of Mankind's Spiritual Nature**

It's believed to be a self-evident truth that the People are continuously responsible to actively declare and promote the principles by which they're willing to live and die. These principles especially include: (1) the spiritual principles that are the foundation of Democracy, (2) the spiritual origin of these United States of America, and (3) the guiding spiritual beliefs that forged the history, the heritage and the traditions of this mighty Nation. The prevailing, unified voice of the People must be clear and steadfast while the ears of the State are finely attuned. No branch of the State shall be deaf to the benevolent voice of the People. The sincere, humble voice of the People – this representing a two-thirds Majority of the People – has consistently expressed the desire to recognize the spiritual essence and nature of

mankind. In this manner, mankind affirms and promotes the empowering belief in the spirituality of all sentient human beings. This in turn creates the social fabric of a loving, moral and tolerant nation.

The Majority's adamant belief in mankind's spiritual essence and nature is often under attack by a small but very active Minority. Thereby, the People's innate spiritual nature is simultaneously assaulted. This is a crucial and continuous confrontation between the ideologies of the theists versus the atheists, or also defined as the spiritualists versus the non-spiritualists. At this time in America's history, the non-spiritualists are better known as humanists. The confrontation now focuses upon the State's responsibility regarding the public affirmation and promotion of mankind's spiritual nature. And it should be clearly understood that the heart of mankind's spiritual nature is the adamant belief in the living reality of mankind's Creator; that is, the Great Divinity of Democracy. Until recently in America's history, the State has always fulfilled its solemn responsibility to publically affirm and promote the spirituality of America; that is, the affirmation and promotion of "The Great American Spirit."

It's also realized all social issues always have a Minority of dissenters who respectfully disagree with the Majority. In a Democracy, the amicable beliefs of the Minority must be rightfully respected, tolerated and protected. Nevertheless, a Democracy is governed by the benevolent beliefs and desires of the Majority, whereby the Minority's dissenting beliefs and desires are respectfully suppressed. Within a Democracy, the Minority never dictates to the Majority, or otherwise the Democracy would cease to exist and the People would be governed by the Nation's Minority of dissenters. Truly and surely, the State is first responsible to provide the maximum good for the maximum number of people, thus fulfilling the primary consent of the governed Majority.

## **The Federal Courts' Suppression of Mankind's Spirituality**

The State's public affirmation and promotion of mankind's spirituality is no longer "actively practiced" because humanists and atheists have successfully challenged the Majority's spiritual ideology. The actual court case in question focuses upon the constitutionality of the American Pledge of Allegiance's statement "one Nation under God." This great spiritual battle has settled upon the current constitutional interpretation of the first topic of the First Amendment, commonly identified as The Separation of Church and State. The whole debate focuses upon a simple, single statement of constitutional law: "Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof." Several lower Federal Courts have agreed with the arguments of the atheists and

humanists. Thus, the courts agreed with the atheists that the Pledge of Allegiance's statement "one Nation under God" is a violation of the constitution. This mighty challenge has gone all the way to the Nation's Supreme Court. However, the atheist's recent challenge has been temporarily set aside because of a legal technicality. Nevertheless, it's just a matter of time before this great spiritual challenge will return to the Supreme Court for a final ruling. The final constitutional ruling by the State's highest Court will determine: (1) if the State will continue to publicly affirm and promote mankind's spiritual essence and nature, or (2) if the State will now embrace and promote humanism and atheism. A win by the humanists and atheists will isolate and insulate mankind's spirituality from all matters of the State. The proper separation of Church and State is a very, very good democratic fundamental. However, the isolation and insulation of Church and State is a very, very bad democratic fundamental. Moreover, the vast majority of the People are adamantly adverse to the isolation and insulation of Church and State.

In accordance with the long-standing interpretation of this constitutional law, it has been the heritage and tradition of the State to affirm and promote within the Public Domain the People's collective spiritual belief that America is "one Nation under God" and that it is "in God we trust." The extreme Minority of the humanists actively seeks to define these public spiritual beliefs to be an element of the Private Domain of Personal Religion. In other words, the Majority's beliefs in "one Nation under God" and "in God we trust" are defined by the humanists to be doctrines and dogma of personal religion. The humanists disregard the truthful fact that these are the common, foundational and public spiritual beliefs of all religions, which profoundly includes the vast Majority of the American People. The truth is mankind's spiritual nature existed long before any man-made religions took root within mankind's evolving societies. Furthermore, mankind's spiritual nature continues to exist long after mankind's religious nature has expired, whereby the religious nature expires at the moment of physical death. Mankind is first and foremost a spiritual creature, and as a result, mankind is endowed by his Creator with certain unalienable Rights. It's also noted this great democratic fundamental is believed and embraced by the vast Majority of the American People.

Now, the People's adamant beliefs that America is one Nation under God and that America trusts in God are very important spiritual principles. However, the heart and soul of the People's unalienable Rights is the spiritual belief that "all men are created equal." Once again, this profound belief is adamantly believed and embraced by the People's Majority. But what do the secular humanists and atheists believe about this great democratic pillar? Is the belief in the Equality of Mankind a religious belief; and therefore, is not to be embraced and promoted by the State? The Equality of Mankind is not a religious doctrine or dogma, or a social doctrine, or a political proposition. Truly and surely, the democratic fundamental in the Equality of Mankind is the foundational backbone of American Democracy.

Nevertheless, the Equality of Mankind is far removed from the physical world; but instead, it's a profound spiritual and even ethereal belief. If the atheists had their way, then the phrase "all men are created equal" would be deleted from America's Declaration of Independence.

Mankind's spiritual nature cannot be separated from the State, the Church, or the very fabric of personhood. The common bond of all people in all nations is based upon the adamant belief that mankind's true essence and nature is a spiritual essence and nature. By virtue of mankind's inner sense of spiritual intuition, mankind's spiritual nature is objectively realized and is then embraced as mankind's true nature. We, the American People, are proudly derived from many nations, composed of all races, are the progeny of various cultures, and we speak with a multitude of languages. We are also religiously diversified in accordance with one's personal choice of conscience. In our new cultural amalgam we have a single common bond that's founded upon mankind's spiritual nature. History proves mankind's spirituality is the most fundamental theme of the human experience, and mankind's collective soul holds this to be a self-evident truth. The Solidarity of the Human Race is founded upon mankind's spiritual essence, thus resulting in mankind's natural, internal drive for life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness. We are what we are because it's our spiritual nature, and thus being exactly what our Creator created us to be – free sentient human beings that are perfectly equal before the living throne of Democracy's Great Divinity.

## **The Great Divinity of Democracy**

From mankind's totally biased perspective, the Great Divinity of Democracy is amorphous by human conception. Our Democratic Divinity is neither monotheistic nor polytheistic, or even pantheistic, but is any of these concepts as based upon one's personal, subjective preference. Our Creator is not Christian, Jewish, Islamic, Hindu, Buddhist, or any other man-made religion. The Great Divinity of Democracy is any of these man-made religions, is all of these man-made religions, and is based upon the individual's personal theistic belief system. The Private Domain of Religion is deeply personal, mostly forged by one's cultural heritage and family customs. In America all benevolent religions are publicly affirmed by the great spiritual and democratic principle "each according to the dictates of one's own conscience." This even includes the personal conscience of atheists and humanists, for they are free to believe and disbelieve as they willfully desire. Emphatically speaking, be sure to realize your personal, subjective religious preference is primarily forged by your cultural biases and your conscience. In addition, be sure to realize the greatest tolerance in the entire Cosmos is religious tolerance. Our Creator does not care how you perceive Him. He only cares that you perceive Him in truth and in spirit and that you truly love Him and all His children. Our Creator wants you to use your gift of spiritual intuition so that you

know His reality and His perfect love for all His Children. And that perfect love especially applies to you. Listen to your Creator's loving whisper: **“Be still and know that I am.”**

## **The Many Blessings of Mankind's Spirituality**

Mankind's spiritual nature adamantly believes in the living reality of his Creator, the active love for his Creator, the steadfast loyalty to his Creator, and the final accountability to his Creator – these being true elements of Mankind's Natural Order. Beyond any doubt, mankind's spiritual nature is not constrained by or limited to the Private Domain of Man-Made Religions. The belief in mankind's spiritual nature is a living truth and is the basis for the American democratic social system – a system of Divine Law, not written upon paper, but written upon the hearts of the People. This is a Cosmic Law of Mankind's Natural Order that takes precedence over all of mankind's written laws. And it's also the foundation for The Five Pillars of Democracy – these being Brotherly Love, morality, tolerance, self-discipline, and the will to sacrifice for a Higher Cause and the Greater Good. If all men were truly loving, moral and tolerant, then the State would probably cease to exist. However, the lustful immorality of the few makes the necessity of the State for the many. Accordingly, the essence of mankind's spiritual nature creates a spiritual foundation that secures the following blessings of the individual, the People, and the Nation.

1. Mankind's spirituality fulfills the inner longings of Brotherly Love, thus benefiting and serving the individual and the social collective.
2. Mankind's spirituality establishes and reinforces good moral character of the individual and collectively for the People.
3. Mankind's spirituality promotes the well-being of the individual, which in its collective action promotes the well-being of the People.
4. Mankind's spirituality recognizes the Great Divinity of Democracy, thus motivating the individual to serve mankind's gracious Creator, whatever one's personal conception of the Creator may be. The best way to serve America is to first serve the Great Divinity of Democracy.
5. Mankind's spirituality provides and reinforces the individual's motivation to serve the Nation, even to the sacrifice of the individual's life. Surely, freedom is not free, but is paid by the blood, the guts, the tears, and the lives of those who love their Creator, their country, their family, their fellow sentient human beings, and freedom.

6. Mankind's spirituality provides the emancipation from the Fear of Death by the deep-seated belief that spiritual life continues after physical death. In turn, the spiritual attribute of hope is born, and thus empowers the People to live life with a Living Hope. It is very good to saturate yourself with Hope! Where shall your mind dwell at the moment of your physical death?
7. Mankind's spirituality provides a deep-seated sense of hope and optimism for the individual and the Nation, thus securing the inner sensations of happiness. When you exercise your spiritual nature, then the natural human right to pursue happiness easily leads to the "Attainment of Happiness."
8. Mankind's spirituality provides a safeguard against the corruption of the Nation. Accordingly, the successful basis for trusting mankind's Creator, in lieu of trusting man, is established and secured. History has repeatedly proven man is not trustworthy. Mankind's innate and perverted lust for power and money is easily abused and corrupted.
9. Mankind's spirituality fulfills the living spirit of the Constitution's Preamble, which states: "We the People of the United States in order to form a more perfect union, establish justice, insure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution of the United States of America."

## **The Spiritual Foundation of America's Democracy**

Upon this spiritual foundation arises the American spirit and the American way of life – a spirit and way of life that's worthy of the State's support, affirmation and promotion within the Public Domain. In response to these solemn blessings, the State's representatives shall honor and fulfill the People's spiritual needs and desires. This includes the State's appointed representatives as well as the State's elected representatives. And this mandate is further reinforced by the fact that these representatives take an oath to uphold the duties of their office and the American Constitution. And to whom are these oaths given – to a fragile and imperfect man or to the Great Divinity of Democracy?

The vast majority of Americans are a godly people, perceiving ourselves to be one Nation under God, and gladly trusting in the benevolent love and care of our gracious Creator. Our steadfast beliefs in mankind's Creator and mankind's spiritual nature are rightfully, collectively, publicly and traditionally affirmed in our pledge of allegiance, in our national anthem, in our patriotic songs, in our public murals and monuments, and even on our currency. To deprive the spiritual needs of the People is to smother and kill the spiritual nature of the People, and to deny our

spiritual nature is to deny who we truly are. The People and the State must embrace what we truly are and who we truly are; that is, a spiritual People and a spiritual Nation who adamantly believe and trust in mankind's Creator. And beware! History has consistently proven one truth about nations that have risen to world dominance. "Chaos always consumes a nation that rejects the living reality of mankind's Creator, which then leads to the collective failure to exercise Brotherly Love, morality, tolerance, goodness, and righteousness – these being the true virtues of Democracy."

May the American People always praise America's Creator and give thanks to America's Creator by the State's public affirmation of His living reality and His equal love for all His children. And let it always be this way until secular humanism and atheism become the majority belief of the American People; and therefore, the majority rule of the American People. And may America's gracious, benevolent and loving Creator forgive us all if we, the collective majority of the American People, should ever fail to declare, to affirm and to promote mankind's spiritual nature and the Great Divinity of Democracy.

## **2.4 The Public Domain of the Collective's Spirituality Versus the Private Domain of the Individual's Religion**

I once read a news story regarding a Congressional bill to reaffirm the National Motto, which is "In God We Trust." The bill was sponsored by Congress Representative Randy Forbes, a Republican from the great state of Virginia. In addition, the bill was submitted with 64 co-sponsors, 60 Republicans and 4 Democrats. Eventually, the bill passed the House of Representative's Judiciary Committee, but only after a sharp partisan debate. It was the usual political bickering between Republicans and Democrats. The debate was based upon the interpretation of the Constitution's First Amendment concerning what is now called the Separation of Church and State. The proper Separation of Church and State is a very, very good Constitutional Law.

The phrase "In God We Trust" was first used on a two-cent coin in 1864 and was expanded to several other coin denominations by 1866 during the peak of the Civil War. Every warring party wants God to be on their side. I read that Abraham Lincoln was an active party to this movement. The motto wasn't used on all coins until 1938. I could not find an easy reference regarding the historical use of the phrase as printed on paper money. However, in 1954 Congress passed a bill that required all currency bear the motto. It should also be noted this bill was passed just one year after another bill added the phrase "Under God" to the Pledge of Allegiance, thus creating the complete phrase "one Nation under God." Beyond any doubt, these were America's reactions to the global threat of the atheistic,

oppressive and easily corrupted social-political system of communism. I firmly believe the inner core of the ideological war between Democracy and communism is the battle of beliefs between theism and atheism. The 1954 law was finally signed by President Eisenhower two years later on July 30, 1956. A separate law was passed in 1956 which specifically established "In God We Trust" as America's National Motto. The motto was slowly added to all paper money until the task was finally completed in 1966.

I sense an acute national anxiety that America is now standing at a critical crossroads where the wrong turn may easily lead to the end of America's Godly blessings and associated prosperity, the spiritual life of America, and the very essence and nature of American Democracy. **This is because there's a very active and vocal group of citizens who either knowingly, or unknowingly, are sucking the spirituality of America right out of the Nation.** The focal issues concern the true principles of the Separation of Church and State, the Freedom of Religion, and America's foundational belief that all sentient human beings are created equal. These three principles are the very heart and soul of Democracy. This confrontation is actually between theism and atheism, where this atheism defines itself as humanism. Since the 1960's there has been a very active movement to keep Democracy's theistic foundation out of all public affairs that use federal funding. This especially includes our public schools. Ultimately, the confrontation is a battle over the interpretation of America's Constitution regarding the doctrine of the Separation of Church and State. The opponents of Democratic theism have eroded the sub-foundation of the long established meaning of the Separation of Church and State. These theistic adversaries have slowly made the separation doctrine very subjective, thus creating new interpretations that are now open for debate and confrontation.

Let us closely consider the Constitutional Law that's in question. "Congress shall make no law respecting **an establishment of religion**, or **prohibiting the free exercise thereof**." How can a law that seems so simple and direct become so open to interpretation and debate? In direct support of America's long-term interpretation and enforcement of the First Amendment, the Supreme Court has clearly stated the Nation's public institutions presuppose a Supreme Being and that **government recognition of God does not constitute the establishment of a state church** as the Constitution's authors intended to prohibit (*Zorach versus Clauson* 1951). This is the established, historical and proper interpretation of the Separation of Church and State. On the other hand, the humanists actively pursue the complete exclusion and reference of Democracy's theistic foundation from all governmental institutions and other institutions which receive federal funding. This effort of exclusion represents **the isolation and insulation** of theism from the State. Surely and truly, the isolation and insulation of God from the State were not the desires or intentions of our Founding Fathers, and they are not the desires of the vast majority of today's citizens.

We the People are first and foremost a spiritual People whose Life Models are founded upon the universal belief in the living reality of mankind's loving Creator. Why is this such an important consideration? Here are my reflections to this very important question.

1. The belief in the Great Divinity of Democracy promotes Brotherly Love, morality and tolerance. In turn, these attributes enhance the development of honest and trustworthy citizens for the betterment of the Nation.
2. The belief in a loving Creator also fosters the belief in the continuation of spiritual life after physical death. Only by this great spiritual belief can mankind live life with hope and optimism.
3. The hope and optimism in a loving Creator and the continuation of life forges the only ideology that consoles and comforts the grief of death. This includes the death of those you love as well as the soulful preparation for your own death. Where shall your mind dwell at the moment of your physical death?
4. Mankind's spiritual nature forms the foundation of all man-made religions. In this manner, Democracy rightfully promotes and protects the Public Domain of mankind's spirituality while it also obliges and protects the Private Domain of a person's religious conscience. And of course, the protection of a person's private religious beliefs is predicated upon the condition that these beliefs are not belligerently fanatical, thus causing harm to others or to the fanatical religionist.

In the final analysis of this great debate, the confrontation reduces to two fundamental questions. First, do the vast majority of Americans truly believe we are one Nation under God? And second, do the vast majority of Americans truly trust in God? It must also be realized this generic concept of God is a spiritual representation of the Great Divinity of Democracy, and it does not represent any specific concepts, doctrines or dogmas of a man-made religion. Beyond any doubt, spiritualists and theists adamantly believe: (1) America is "**one Nation under God**," and (2) it is "**in God we trust**." I call these two great pillars of belief **America's Two Great Virtues**, and they have been a critical element in America's origin, history, heritage, traditions and the American way of life. America's Two Great Virtues are now in "public jeopardy," where their meaning, value and purpose lay tenuous in the hands of a very vocal and active minority.

In the reflections of the potential loss, I must say something in support of my deep-rooted and heart-felt convictions. My love for my gracious Creator, my country and my fellow citizens moves me so I must address this great issue. In my reflections, my mind continues to return to a single question. Can Democracy exist

without the People's unified belief in the living reality of mankind's Creator and the People's consequential response to trust in Him? And once again as a spiritualist, I firmly believe Democracy would perish if the People's Majority didn't firmly and actively believe in the living reality of our Creator; and thus trust Him to wisely guide our Nation. History has proven again and again that all of mankind is highly fallible, and that trusting in a single man is incredibly dangerous. The corruption of a single man has destroyed many nations.

Beliefs, truth, spirituality and religion are inherently intertwined, significantly affecting the Public Domain of the People and the Private Domain of the Individual. As a result, the associated responsibilities of the State are in constant debate. The honest differences of beliefs and opinions are a common facet in all societies, nations and governments. It's imperative to resolve these conflicting beliefs and opinions in a peaceful manner by which the maximum good is provided for the maximum number of people. In the Public Domain, the benevolent beliefs and opinions of the majority must be expressed and affirmed. At the same time, Brotherly Love must be actively exercised so the opposing and dissenting beliefs and opinions of the minority are duly understood, respected and protected. For this we know with the utmost confidence that without Brotherly Love, Democracy would not and could not exist. Keeping these precepts in mind, let's allow the living spirit of truth illuminate our way to a deeper and broader understanding of the proper and appropriate responsibilities of the Church and State as desired and needed by the People's Majority. Again I say, it's always the first intent and requirement of Democracy to fulfill the beliefs, will and desires of the People's Majority while protecting the right of the People's Minority to respectfully and peacefully dissent.

## **2.5 What Is This Word "God?"**

Throughout this book I intentionally use several words, phrases and acronyms for the word "God." As a general rule, I use the word "God" in a very broad and generic sense, similar in meaning to the phrase "the Great Divinity of Democracy." I personally don't like using the word "God" because it has become misused, over used, abused, mundane and falsely invoked to promote one's own selfish purposes. Unfortunately, you cannot address the subject of mankind's Creator without using the word "God." For too many people, the word "God" conjures up justifiable biases that are derived from the bloody, oppressive history of world religions and the association with a belligerent and revengeful God. With this type of perspective of mankind's Creator, it's only natural for fear and anxiety to be associated with the word "God." In response, I actively seek to expand the true, genuine meaning of the word "God." This of course reflects my personal beliefs. It's the reader's responsibility to soulfully determine his or hers personal beliefs regarding the conception of our Creator, His actual existence, and His

essence and nature. In addition, I desire to provide alternative words, phrases and acronyms for the word “God.” How can anyone define mankind’s Creator in a single word? Surely and truly, the essence and nature of God is so broad and so deep that it’s only natural for mankind to grasp and grope at a truthful understanding of His essence, His nature, His power, and His glory. Accordingly, I use the word “God” to reflect a composite of concepts that include, but are not necessarily limited to, the following reflections. The following paragraphs define what I mean when I use the word “God” and associated phrases and acronyms. The reader should first recall the discussion in Section 2.3 and under the subsection titled “The Great Divinity of Democracy.”

## **God Concept #1**

### **The Origin of Mankind**

These are my humble beliefs regarding the origin of mankind. I firmly and confidently believe our Creator is the genesis of mankind. The word “**genesis**” means “origin or source.” Accordingly, mankind’s Creator is mankind’s origin, source and genesis. How mankind was created remains a great mystery to mankind. Consider these questions.

1. Did the Creator magically create mankind by molding a clay figure and then blowing life into the figure? In this case the chicken came before the egg.
2. Did the Creator use a biological, cellular, genetic process to create mankind? In this case the egg came before the chicken.
3. Did the Creator use a long evolutionary process to create mankind? In this case the evolutionists are correct except that the evolutionary process was guided by an immense intellectual power that overcame all of the natural, physical dangers of evolutionary development. Corporeal life is incredibly fragile, and it exists in an extremely hostile environment.
4. Did the Creator create mankind by the sheer power of His thoughts? There are many people who believe in spontaneous creation. This is also an incredibly frightening concept; that is, the reality of life and death merely controlled by the power of thought. In a flash of anger, the Creator could annihilate the entire human race.

Now, will our Creator ever reveal the process by which He created mankind? If He did, would it make you a better person and a more loving person? If our Creator wanted His Children of Humanity to know their origin, would He not have already revealed this information? Lastly, who is mankind to infringe upon

our Creator's wisdom and sovereignty? All too often we poor, pitiful, puny human beings are too quick to forget who is the Creator and who is the one that's created. I'm always amazed and astounded when people engage in a heated debate over the origin of mankind. Only a closed mind and a cold heart would become involved in such a silly argument that can be neither proven nor disproven. What is it they're really trying to prove, and why are they so intense and adamant to have other people agree with their personal belief? And when the argument is finally dissipated, the realities of life are neither diminished nor enhanced. It's far, far better to expend this energy upon a matter that can enhance yourself. And in the final analysis all I really know is that I do exist. I'm not just talking about the "I think; therefore, I am" type of existence. I'm talking about the "flesh, blood and bones" type of physical existence. This is the external evidence of existence. We must also consider the inner evidence of existence which include the spiritual gifts of sentient free-will and spiritual intuition. Perhaps this is something we should all pray and meditate upon.

## **God Concept #2**

### **The Origin of Mankind's Creator**

Does our Creator have a Creator, or is our Creator the First Source? Is there more than one Supreme Being in the Cosmos? And what came first, our Creator or the Big Bang? Is it possible for our Creator to die? Is it possible for our Creator to evolve beyond His interest in His creation, and thereby abandon His creation? Is cosmic life self-sufficient and self-sustaining? Is our Creator emotionally cold, indifferent and impersonal, or is our Creator emotionally warm, caring and personal? Is heaven a physical part of the Cosmos, or is it a completely separate dimension? How many dimensions are there in the Cosmos? Is the concept of First Origin the same as the concept of Final Destination? In the world-to-come, will we be able to travel in time? Is our Creator truly eternal, and are His creations of sentient beings eternal? What are your questions regarding the origin of life and the world-to-come? And do you become overwhelmed when you reflect and ponder these befuddling questions? Or is this matter beyond the concept and meaning of esoteric?

We're like young children playing in the deep recesses of an infinitely black cave which legend says contains the answers to the great questions of life. But all we have is a single match to help guide our way within the black cave. Most unfortunately, there's insufficient light and time to find just one answer to a meaningful question. And we don't even know if we're in the Cave of Answers. Maybe we're only in the Cave of Questions. Let's hope and pray the world-to-come has the Cave of Answers and the cave has plenty of light. The truth is we may never attain the enlightenment required to answer these questions, not even in

the world-to-come. We pitiful human beings are as helpless as a leaf in the wind. But that's not so bad. We may not be able to control the wind, but we have the ability to set the sails and to steer the rudder. Like magnificent star trekkers, let's embrace and truly enjoy these cosmic adventures of life.

Through a gradual process that involved many years, I was eventually blessed with a very remarkable insight. Three great cosmic forces once wandered the extreme emptiness of the Cosmos. These three cosmic forces are The Cosmic Truth, Cosmic Love and the Primordial Essence of our Creator. As though they were in search of each other, one day they finally converged with one another. At that point in time and that place in space, there you'll find the genesis of our Divine Creator. Where you find the Divine Creator, you'll also find The Cosmic Truth and Cosmic Love. Where you find The Cosmic Truth, you'll also discover our Divine Creator and Cosmic Love. And where you find Cosmic Love, there too will be the Divine Creator and The Cosmic Truth. I call this concept "The Great Holy Cosmic Convergence," and the resulting effects are Cosmic Creativity, Cosmic Truth and Cosmic Love, these being the three primordial elements of life. In the reflections of my personal journey of spiritual discovery, I came to realize my experience involved three stages.

## **The Pursuit of God**

**I sought God and I found Truth.  
I sought Truth and I found Love.  
I sought Love and I found God.**

If you embrace life, be creative, pursue truth, and exercise love, then you'll be on a path that leads to our Celestial Father. Accordingly, it doesn't really matter what your earthly religious affiliation is. It doesn't even matter if you don't have any religious affiliation. It only matters if you embrace life, be creative, pursue truth, and exercise love. To embrace life is to embrace your Creator. To be creative is to be a reflection of your Creator. To pursue truth is to pursue your Creator. And to exercise love for all mankind is to exercise love for your Creator. Let it be perfectly clear that no earthly religion has a monopoly on the path to our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator. Our Creator loves all His children equally and does not restrict any of His children's access to Him and His kingdom. It's mankind's responsibility to be tolerant of all earthly religions, for there are many paths to our Celestial Father. And in your tolerance you may gain an insight to the origin of our Creator.

## **God Concept #3**

### **God Is Our Loving Celestial Father**

God is definitely mankind's Creator as well as the Creator of other sentient beings that mankind has been given knowledge of. And I'm confident there are many more types of sentient beings that shall be revealed in the world-to-come. Science fiction stories pale in comparison to what we shall actually see and experience. What the eye has not seen, or the ear has heard, or that which can be conceived in the hearts of mankind, awaits those who truly, sincerely and genuinely love their Creator. Accordingly, our Creator is **The Lord of Life**. However, it's very important to realize the true relationship between our Creator and ourselves.

Our relationship with our Creator is usually defined with words that were derived by our ancient forefathers; but these words are now obsolete, misleading and sometimes incorrect. The origin of these incorrect words is founded upon the inordinate fear of a mean and revengeful God. These words are "Master," "Lord" and "King." Our loving Creator is not a slave owner; therefore, we're not His slaves and He is not our Master. Our loving Creator is not a king; therefore, we're not His peasant servants and He is not our King or Lord. We may respectfully call our Creator "Master," "Lord," or even "King," but that's only an ancient custom of expressing respect of our Creator's authority. It's incredibly important to know and realize that mankind's Creator is our Heavenly Father; or more accurately stated, our Celestial Father. Thereby, we're our Celestial Father's children. Accordingly, our relationship with our Celestial Father is similar to the relationship between deeply loving earthly parents and their children.

Mankind's Celestial Father is the very essence and nature of love. Emphatically speaking, He is the manifestation and the personification of Cosmic Love. And only Cosmic Love begets Cosmic Love. In addition, our Creator's love is perfect. Only perfect love has the power to cast out all fears, especially the fear of death. Accordingly, our Creator's obedient children actively desire to become the manifestation and the personification of Cosmic Love. Therefore, Cosmic Love becomes a state of being. It's a natural phenomenon for the Creator's obedient children to emulate His greatness. Truly, our Creator's loving nature inspires all who truly seek Him. It's also noted our Creator is the manifestation of patience and kindness. Never forget that love is patient, love is kind. All TSG Lovers are recognized by their patience and their kindness. Lastly, it's noted that only those who love our Celestial Father and all His children shall find comfort and pleasure in His Kingdom, which is the Kingdom of Love.

## **God Concept #4**

### **God Is Our Benevolent Sovereign**

Mankind's Creator is the Supreme Being of His sovereign domain; and therefore, He is our Cosmic Sovereign. The word "**sovereign**" has several interesting definitions: (1) greatest in degree, utmost or extreme; (2) having supreme rank, power and authority; and (3) being above all others in character, importance, excellence, and so forth. The word "sovereign" has a sense and aura of righteousness, whereby no one has the right to declare authority over a recognized State of Sovereignty. In this same manner, nations have natural rights of sovereignty over their land, their air space, their shore lines, their ships at sea, and other internationally agreed conditions of sovereignty. This especially includes the sovereignty of a nation's citizens. It's also noted the inherent power of a sovereign naturally and rightfully earns the honorable label of "lord." The Christian Bible refers to God as "Lord" more than any other label. Praise the Lord!

Now, mankind has no idea of the limits of our Creator's domain or the full essence and nature of His domain. Is our Creator the Sovereign of the entire universe or just our galaxy? Because our galaxy is so immense, maybe our galaxy is divided into multiple space sectors where each sector is ruled by its own Supreme Being. Could there be galactic wars between Supreme Beings and their created creatures. Could the war between angels and demons actually be a galactic war? Our collective speculations are only limited by our collective imaginations. But this we know for sure. The actual size of the universe is far beyond human comprehension. I once read in a college text book on astronomy that our galaxy has over a billion stars, and the universe has over a billion galaxies. Literally speaking, the universe could contain thousands of Creative Entities such as mankind's Creator. I sense deep within my heart our Creator's domain shall be revealed in the world-to-come. Also, we shall have access to our Creator's domain. I personally believe that in the world-to-come, the Children of Humanity are the Children of the Stars. I look forward with great expectation to seeing the magnificent cosmic sites that are scattered throughout our galaxy and hopefully beyond. Beam me up Scotty!

Mankind's Creator is our Cosmic Sovereign, and He is the Sovereign Ruler of His domain, thus having the supreme and final authority and power over His entire domain. In addition, our Creator always exercises His authority and power with wisdom, grace, benevolence and love. Our Creator never reacts with jealousy, revenge or retribution. These are human attributes derived from conditional love and selective love. Our Creator's love is always unconditional and perfect, thereby always pursuing mercy, forgiveness, redemption and reconciliation. Our Creator's love is perfect, thus casting out all fears. And because His love is perfect, He always acts with perfect patience and with perfect kindness. Never forget that love

is patient and love is kind. Accordingly, our Creator gives to His children the desires of their hearts, even if a child desires isolation from our Creator. It's profoundly sad to sentient beings who choose total sentient death over our Creator's wisdom, grace, benevolence and love. I believe sentient death is a state of nonexistence; that is, oblivion. The word "**oblivion**" means "the state of being forgotten." What value is your life if you're ultimately forgotten?

## **God Concept #5** **God and the Holy Trinity**

The doctrine of the Holy Trinity is one of the greatest mysteries of the Christian Church. I believe no one really understands this religious doctrine. And of course, this includes everyone in the worldwide Christian Church. I'm sure it's held in deep belief just because Jesus directly taught specific elements of the Holy Trinity. That's surely the basis for believing this most unusual belief, whereby it's an unusual belief from the perspective of other world religions. I'm not aware of any other religion believing in the Holy Trinity. So then, does the Holy Trinity – that is, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit (or Holy Ghost if you prefer) – really exist?

In my personal reflections and meditations, I have come to sincerely believe our loving Creator reveals Himself in these three forms of manifestation. In fact, I even sense what I call "a gender polarization." My sensations are very mystifying to myself, because my sensations don't perceive earthly genders as we physically know them; that is, male and female. My reflections sense a very specific life-entity that is best described as "a Fatherly gender" and "a Motherly gender." Naturally, the Fatherly gender is ascribed to our Heavenly Father, or as I personally prefer to say, our Celestial Father. But most unique to my experiences, I sense the Motherly gender is ascribed to the Holy Spirit. According to my own unique belief, I personally call the Holy Spirit "our Holy Mother Spirit." Again I emphasize these personal sensations are not gender based as sentient human beings know and understand the male and female genders.

I would like to note two other personal sensations I've gained in my reflections about the Holy Trinity. First, my personal sensation of the Fatherly gender associates our Celestial Father with an aura of love that's best described as **tuff-love**. This is the form of love that's called "**fatherly love**," and its primary focus concerns the relationship of the individual with his or hers family, friends and society. Fatherly love constantly exhorts the individual to first fulfill ones responsibilities in order to obtain associated privileges. Accordingly, our Celestial Father rightfully expects the best from His children and shall lovingly reprimand His child who is not fulfilling his or hers responsibilities and potential.

Second, my personal sensation of the Motherly gender associates our Holy Mother Spirit with an aura of love that's best described as **tender-love**, as in tender loving care – or even better, tender loving compassion. This is the form of love that's called "**motherly love**," and its primary focus concerns the well-being of the individual. Our Holy Mother Spirit tenderly embraces Her children even when they perform less than reasonably expected and as lovingly encouraged. Our Holy Mother Spirit knows tomorrow is another day, and it shall provide golden opportunities for Her children to do better, and thus evolve into the best loving nature of their potential life-entity. Your Divine Daddy and Divine Mommy love you with an unconditional and perfect love. Be sure to count this as your greatest blessing in life.

When I reflect upon the Holy Spirit and the Spirit's nature of tender loving care, the Statue of Liberty pops in my mind. Lady Liberty has a very spiritual basis and aura. Liberty is associated with freedom, and freedom is associated with free-will. We have the free-will to believe in the living reality of God and to embrace Him, and we also have the free-will to disbelieve in God and to reject Him. However, this is not the element that connects the Statue of Liberty with the Holy Mother Spirit. Lady Liberty's poem by Emma Lazarus provides the connection between the statue and the Holy Spirit's element of tender loving care. I believe Lazarus' poem provides one of the best descriptions of our Creator's nature of tender loving care.

### **The Creator's Golden Door**

Give me your tired, your poor, your huddled masses yearning to breathe free, the wretched refuse of your teeming shore. Send these, the homeless, tempest-tost to me, I lift my lamp beside the golden door!

Finally, here's my simplified nomenclature for the Holy Trinity. Our Heavenly Father is the Lord of Life. The Son of God is the Lord of Love. And the Holy Spirit is Our Lady of Compassion. Finally, you should consider and reflect upon these questions.

1. What is Jesus' name in the celestial realm?
2. Is His celestial name Jesus, or was Jesus just His earthly name while He was fulfilling His terrestrial mission on earth?
3. Has Jesus ever fulfilled terrestrial missions on other terrestrial planets? If He has, then has He always been the male gender, or has He actually had terrestrial missions where He was the female gender? Now image that – the Father, the Daughter and the Holy Spirit!
4. Does Jesus have a gender in the celestial realm, and will you have a gender in the celestial realm? Can you imagine yourself and those you deeply love without a gender?
5. Finally, does the belief in the Holy Trinity make Christianity a polytheistic religion? After all, Christianity doctrine includes the phrase, “God the Father. God the Son. And God the Holy Spirit.” That sure sounds like three Gods to me, and more than one God is polytheism. I'll re-address this question later. I have additional discussions about the Holy Trinity and the Holy Spirit in: (1) Section 3.2 and the subsection titled “Sentient Human Beings and Spiritual Activation”; (2) Section 4.12 and the subsection titled “The Holy Trinity”; and (3) Section 4.14 titled “Why Is the Sin of Blasphemy Against The Holy Spirit Unforgivable?”

## **God Concept #6**

### **God's Omni Natures**

I selfishly want and need my Creator to be **omniscient** (all knowing), **omnipotent** (all powerful), and **omnipresent** (all present). Only in this manner shall our Creator be able to always overcome evil; and thus, always protect His children, preserve heaven, and sustain eternity. Furthermore, our Creator must have an omnificient nature. The word “**omnificient**” means “having all powers of creation, and thus creating all things.” Our Creator must be omnificient to ensure that a good, loving person would not be condemned to hell (in the event hell actually exists) or transmuted them to oblivion. Likewise, I don't want an evil sentient being residing in the Kingdom of Heaven, for I fear such an event could lead to the destruction of Heaven. Accordingly, our omnificient Creator must be an impregnable and invincible **Superman Sugar Daddy**. Only in this manner shall our Creator be able to always protect us, sustain us, and give us the desires of our hearts. On the other hand, what would happen if God actually had a cosmic vulnerability? Could other supreme beings of the universe attack and defeat our loving Creator?

The thought of our Creator having any weakness, imperfection or deficiency is so malevolently hideous that I have to totally purge the idea from my being. Nevertheless, I fear my Creator will not fulfill all my expectations, especially my childish and naive whims. It's a celestial weakness of dependency to need our Creator to be a Superman Sugar Daddy. As a necessity to mute my fearful anxieties, I foolishly demand our Creator to be our protector and lavish provider. I like the concept of our Creator as our Superman Sugar Daddy so much that I use the acronym "SMSD" as an easy reference. When the trials and tribulations of the terrestrial life pour upon you, fear not! Your SMSD is on His way to save you. Always remember this. All things work to good for those who truly, sincerely and genuinely love their SMSD.

## **God Concept #7**

### **God's Many Names & Conceptions**

I once read that one of the oldest Judean references to mankind's Creator is the letters "YHWH." According to what I read, the vowelless word intentionally had no vowels so that it couldn't be pronounced. Our ancient fathers believed that to say God's name out loud was blasphemous. At that time the punishment for blasphemy was death by stoning. The profound ignorance of our ancient forefathers always astounds me. Vowels were eventually added to YHWH which then became the word "Yahweh." I've also read Yahweh is God's personal name. The Judean Bible also uses the words "Elohim" and "Jehovah" for our Creator's personal name. The word "Jehovah" is used the vast majority of the time. Do you think our Creator has a personal name?

The English word "God" is the common translation for many variations of the original language which the Old Testament Bible was written in. The original language of the Old Testament has various and specific meanings to words and phrases that are simply translated in English as the words "God" or "Lord." Sometimes the word "LORD" (intentionally all capital letters) is used. And of course, Biblical scholars debate and argue over the correct translations of the Bible's original language. What is really meant by this word "God?" Obviously, there's far more meaning than what is conveyed by three simple letters of the English language.

It's also noted Jesus never used a personal name for our Heavenly Father. He usually referenced our Creator as "our heavenly Father" or "our Father in heaven." On the night before His crucifixion in the Garden of Gethsemane, Jesus

called out to our Creator as “Abba.” I’ve read the word “Abba” is an Arabic word whose literal translation in English means “Daddy.” Our gracious, benevolent, loving Creator is Jesus’ Daddy, and He’s also your Celestial Daddy and your Sugar Daddy.

The Moslem name for mankind’s Creator is Allah, and I personally believe it’s a most excellent name for our Creator. I’ve never learned if this is the personal name of our Creator or a generic, formal reference similar to the English use of the words “God,” “Lord” and “Jehovah.” For me personally, Allah is mankind’s Creator, the Lord of Life, and is the same Supreme Being that’s worshiped by the three related religions of Islam, Judaism and Christianity. I have no reservation professing “Allah is Lord,” or “Jehovah is Lord,” or “Yahweh is Lord.” After all, what is really meant by this word “God,” or “Allah,” or “Jehovah,” or “Yahweh,” or “Heavenly Father,” and so on and so on? Meanwhile, it always amazes me that these three great world religions can also have so much belligerent animosity and violence between them. After all, all three religions have a common belief foundation and a common source. Why are the meanest, most violent, and bloodiest conflicts also religious conflicts? I thought one of the main purposes of religion was to reconcile differences – not to forge differences. After all, aren’t all sentient human beings the children of God, no matter what you call Him?

We could expand this discussion to include the multiple names and conceptions of God that are part of the world’s Eastern Religions. But it would require a significant effort just to obtain an introductory knowledge of these many Eastern Religions. There are also many variations within several of these religions. This effort is far beyond the intent of this book, so I leave it to the reader to research the matter to the level of his or hers personal interest. This is the point that needs to be understood. Mankind, as a global collective, has many names for God and many concepts of God. Is there one name and one concept that best defines mankind’s Creator? I confidently believe the answer to this question is an emphatic “NO!”

My favorite reference for God is the phrase “**gracious, benevolent and loving Creator**.” I’ve already typed that phrase several times. I believe this phrase is far more descriptive of our Creator than any other reference of His conception. I further believe this phrase represents a verbal conception of the phrase “God is love.” I also economize this reference by making it the acronym “**GBLC**.” I’m convinced it doesn’t matter to our GBLC how you believe in Him or how you conceive of His manifestation, or even His various forms of manifestations. It only matters if you believe in His existence and you love Him with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind. Likewise, you must also love all His children in this same way.

Now, does our Creator really love one religious group more than another religious group? I adamantly don't believe so! And once you enter the Kingdom of Heaven, are you going to declare yourself to be a Christian or a Jew or a Moslem or any other man-made religious affiliation? Once again, I adamantly don't believe so! You'll simply be a loving and obedient child of our gracious, benevolent, loving Creator. And all citizens of the Kingdom of Love shall love their Creator and their fellow citizens no matter what religious affiliation one had in their terrestrial career.

## **God Concept #8**

### **Personal Preferences & Prejudices**

Regarding the information presented in the previous seven reflections, I don't **really know** how true this information **really is**. And I don't **really know** the degree of certainty that academic scholars hold this information to be **really true**. Like everything that's based in religious antiquity, there's always an excess of variability, there's always lots of opinions, and the associated truths are always more subjective speculation than objective knowledge and hard core facts. We know very little while we believe very much. In other words, the certainty of knowing is always an uncertainty. But none of these uncertainties **really matter**. The only thing that **really matters** is how you perceive your Creator and that you recognize His gracious, benevolent and loving nature. For this I am totally convinced. Believing in the reality of our living Creator and embracing the belief that He is the manifestation and personification of love makes you a better person, and therefore, a better citizen.

What **really is** this word "God?" This you must answer for yourself. And you must also be tolerant of other people's personal answers. This is the core principle of democracy's Freedom of Religion, which really is the freedom to believe according to one's own conscience and one's own subjective preferences and prejudices. Everyone has their own prejudices, and that's natural and acceptable provided the prejudices don't manifest themselves into a state of belligerent animosity. Everyone is significantly influenced by their culture, their life experiences, and the critical people that helped mold their character and personality. Ultimately, the perfect ideal is to produce citizens who are loving, patient, kind, respectful and tolerant. Now, it's your turn to stop and think, reflect and ponder. What do you mean when you use the word "God?"

## **2.6 Our Spiritual Nature Versus Our Religious Nature**

Most people of the world, and especially Americans, discern a difference between mankind's spiritual nature versus mankind's religious nature. While many people are quick to embrace mankind's spiritual nature, they are equally quick to guard against mankind's religious nature. Mankind's history has repeatedly proven the world's daily citizens should have great concern regarding the negative potential of religious abuse, oppression, radicalism, fanaticism and tyranny. But is that the true intent of religion, especially those religions that encourage love, morality, tolerance, self-discipline, charity and the pursuit of truth. As a result of my personal contemplations, I have five personal reflections for the read's consideration.

1. I Am First and Foremost a Spiritualist: I want to demonstrate I'm motivated as a spiritualist and not as a religionist. The truth is I bear contempt for fanatical religionists who have committed, and continue to commit, malevolent acts in the name of their religion. History repeatedly records vile religionists who readily lust for social power; and in their lust, they actively pervert their religion for their own selfish purposes. Beyond any doubt, perverted religionists have inflicted great degradation and depravation upon the daily citizen and the social collective. As a result, contempt for fanatical religionists is widespread throughout the world, and especially in America. Unfortunately, the contempt for these overbearing religionists quickly mutates into a widespread contempt for all religions. In spite of my natural contempt for fanatical religionists, I do respect and encourage religious affiliations that are committed to the pursuit of truth and good will; the exercise of love, morality and tolerance; and the quest for peace, harmony and tranquility.
2. A Natural Fear of the Militant Islamic Fanatics (the MIF's): At this moment in history, I have a great concern regarding the extremely evil fringe of the militant Islamic fanatics that are attacking nations around the world. These fanatics possess a warped and distorted sixth century ideology in a twenty-first century world. The willful use of weapons of mass destruction is a very realistic potential. Like most Americans, I reasonably fear these sadistic fanatics will actively pursue mankind's worst nightmare – the use of nuclear and biological weapons. The MIF's have made a publicly proclaimed goal for an Islamic victory which includes the murder of four million Americans. Let there be no doubt about the evil of these despicable Islamic fanatics, for they actively undermine the love of mankind's Creator and the love of mankind. Emphatically speaking, I deeply believe the War on Terrorism is a good and noble war.

3. Mankind Is a Spiritual Being: I want to establish a reasonable basis for the rational proposition that mankind is a spiritual being. I believe this to the deepest abyss of my heart, and it's this belief that gives me **the living hope** I need to live an optimistic, positive and proactive life. Life would surely be a devastating drudgery without this living hope. Life would be pure misery if I didn't possess my spiritual nature, and I would earnestly question the value of living in such a state of misery. Be sure to saturate yourself with Hope!
4. Mankind's Creator Is a Living Reality: I want to embrace and support the People's collective, adamant belief in the living reality of mankind's Creator and the true existence of His kingdom. And of course, His kingdom includes the terrestrial realm as well as the celestial realm. Furthermore, I want to make it clear that I believe the essence and nature of mankind's Creator is love, patience, kindness and tolerance.
5. A Democratic State Must Support and Promote Mankind's Spirituality: I believe it's imperative the State actively supports and promotes the People's adamant belief in the living reality of mankind's Creator. The active participation of the State in regards to mankind's spiritual nature secures many social benefits for the Nation. It should always be remembered the State is responsible for supporting and sustaining the benevolent will of the Majority.

## **2.7 The Negative Connotations of Religion and God**

In America today the word "God" has multiple interpretations including negative connotations. This includes negative connotations that are derived from various religious institutions that admirably embrace and promote the living reality of mankind's Creator. However, too many religions proclaim their religion is the only true religion, and only by your membership in their religious order can you find true enlightenment, redemption and salvation. And that's assuming you believe you're in need of redemption and salvation.

This is what some religious organizations proclaim. "Believe as we do if you want to be saved. Only by our religion's doctrines can you gain access to God; obtain His forgiveness and redemption; secure His blessings, gifts and treasures; enter into His eternal life and eternal bliss; and gain entry into Heaven." In essence, these religions proclaim they have a monopoly regarding God and His Kingdom. It's highly self-evident mankind's organized religions are greatly biased and prejudicial, being mostly based upon cultural traditions, practices, and their respective nation's way of life.

With so many religions competing for your heart and soul, it's no wonder a person becomes confused and dazed about religion and the nature of mankind's Creator. Eventually you learn religious people don't have a monopoly on love, patience, kindness, morality, tolerance and other desirable attributes associated with God. And you quickly learn these religions want more than your heart and soul. They also want your money, your time, and your blind allegiance. Your idealistic expectations are quickly shattered as soon as you realize the idealisms of truth, love, tolerance, goodness and righteousness are inconsistently exercised by all religious affiliations.

From the perspective of the nonreligious, the single greatest attribute perceived of religion and religious people is the attribute of hypocrisy. Nonetheless, you should always remember people are people whether they're religious people or nonreligious people. And the hallmark of the Children of Humanity is imperfection. Indeed, we are an imperfect people in an imperfect world. In spite of these negative elements of man-made religions, you still need to pursue The Cosmic Truth regarding the living reality of our Creator. Again I ask. What is really meant by this word "God?"

## **2.8 The Full Meaning of the Word "Religion"**

---

It's very important to understand what the word "religion" really means. Most people only think of religion as institutions that believe in the reality of mankind's Creator, whereby each religion is based upon the specific beliefs, doctrines and dogmas of the respective religion. As a general representation for most world religions, God represents mankind's Supreme Being, the Almighty, mankind's Creator, and the Great Benevolent Force of the Cosmos. A religion is also polytheistic or monotheistic. Most religions focus upon specific beliefs concerning the creation of the Cosmos, principles of faith, the power of prayer and meditation, the path to salvation, and final judgment. Usually, but not always, God is believed to be holy, perfect and omniscient. In addition, you must also be holy and perfect in order to dwell in Heaven. I believe mankind's drive for perfection is a major source of the collective's state of anxiety; that is, the inordinate fear of the unknown. And the collective's greatest anxiety is the fear of death.

The limited summary of religion define above is a quick and broad stroke to describe what most people think when they hear the word "religion." However, the word "religion" is much broader in meaning. **The word "religion" means "a specific fundamental set of beliefs and practices generally agreed upon by a number of persons or sects."** By this definition, the word "religion" is not necessarily limited to concepts of God and theism. In fact, by this definition atheism is a religion – the religion of the nonbelievers of God. While atheists may not be formally organized, they still have a set of beliefs and practices.

Furthermore, all forms of government are forms of religion. Governments have and operate by a set of beliefs and practices. In the truest sense, democracy, socialism, communism and fascism are forms of religion; that is, social religion. Governments are always competing for believers and followers.

A dictatorship is a form of religion, whereby the dictator usually makes himself a god figure. The dictator must have his People embrace, praise and revere him, lifting up the dictator above the People, even to the point of veneration and worship. This is why in countries ruled by dictatorships, pictures and statues of the dictator are publicly displayed throughout the country. Unfortunately, dictators are usually infected with two psychological dysfunctions – megalomania and paranoia. Subsequently, dictatorships always descend into tyranny and oppression, whereby the People are ruled by fear, intimidation and brutality. Is there such a thing as a benevolent dictator? In a dictatorship, brotherly love, morality and tolerance are quickly swept under the carpet and then trampled upon.

In the final analysis, all political and social actions are special forms of religious affiliation; that is, a specific fundamental set of beliefs and practices generally agreed upon by a number of persons or sects. Unfortunately, a sect can be a minority political party that gains control of a nation by brutal force. But usually a nation is controlled by the beliefs and practices of the society's majority. Furthermore, religious beliefs, political beliefs, and social beliefs naturally intermingle and weave a social fabric that's a synergy of a collective belief system. Consequently, it's very important to realize there are three subgroups of religion: (1) theistic religion; (2) political religion; and (3) social religion. And all three religious subgroups are constantly interacting with one another. This is why religion cannot be separate and isolated from politics, and thus evade the associated effects upon society.

Now, here's the point to know and remember. Any organization that seeks to mold the beliefs, thoughts, speech and behavior of the people associated with the organization is effectively operating as a religion. Religion, politics and society are deeply and delicately interwoven, whereby one element always affects the other two elements. Ultimately, all religious issues become the focus of personal beliefs and the desire to secure the final control of the individual's mind. And now, here's the rub. It's the inherent nature and desire of religion and politics to create the controlling ideology and mindset of the respective society. There are many people who want you to believe and think just like they do. This is why it's so very important that you believe for yourself, and that you know why you believe the convictions of your heart.

The question to consider is this. What is the best and optimum ideology that provides the maximum good for the maximum number of people, and without adversely affecting the opposing minority? I'm deeply convinced The Ideology of

Love is the only mindset that consistently serves the majority and the minority. However, this is a rational perspective that's conceived only by a healthy sentient mind. A defective and dysfunctional sentient human being, such as a dictator or a fanatical religious zealot, is neither rational nor sensible, and such a dysfunctional person often seeks to dominate, control and command his fellow sentient human beings. Beware of the dysfunctional and irrational person, especially one who becomes fanatical and inflexible about his or hers ideology. Suffering and misery shall quickly follow.

## **2.9 The Tyrannical History of Religious Fanaticism**

Having a negative response to organized religion is fully understandable when you consider the violent history of mankind's world religions. As a result, many people perceive religion and the associated belief in God to be a curse upon mankind. The truth is fanatical religionists have driven many people to believe in atheism. How can anyone want to believe in a God who's so mean, demanding, jealous, revengeful, sacrificial and unforgiving? And who wants to live in a world where you're constantly in fear of being quashed like a bug by an over demanding and bullying Divinity who dictates a tooth for a tooth, an eye for an eye and an eternal life in hell just for being created as an imperfect human being?

### **Today's Religious Fanatics of Islam – The MIF's**

The natural fear of religious fanatics is especially prevalent at this historical moment because of the atrocious violence of the extremely fanatical Islamic Jihad. They're an enemy without a name or nation, and their common bond is the religion of Islam and an intense hatred for the nations of Israel and America. I call them "**the Militant Islamic Fanatics,**" or simply "**the MIF's.**" They're a very small splinter group of the greater Islamic Nation, and they're fanatical, radical and belligerent renegades of Islam. Let it be perfectly clear that the vast majority of the Islamic Nation is loving, moral, tolerant, gracious, benevolent and peaceful. However, in the eyes of the world, the MIF's make all Islamic believers look vile and evil. Because of the MIF's, very negative and prejudicial thoughts and feelings are pouring upon the entire Nation of Islam. However, no one should be judged and condemned because of their unintentional association with an evil entity, especially when the association is by name only.

The MIF's evil actions create fear, and fear creates retaliatory condemnation. In the eyes of the world the MIF's are the evil personification of "Islam's Ancient Jihad." The villainy of the Ancient Jihad is reborn, and this is all because of a group of MIF's that intensely hate the Jewish Nation of Israel. And

they also hate America for supporting Israel. The long-term consequences of our ancient forefathers have laid a foundation to perpetuate the evil nature of mankind. How can love, peace, harmony and tranquility ever take root where the malevolent nature of mankind prevails and openly breeds? In the truest sense, the MIF's are actively breeding hatred against Israel and nations that actively support them, especially America. And they may hate America more than they hate Israel. Truly, America's fear of the MIF's is totally justified.

It's extremely clear these Islamic fanatics have actively embraced **mankind's Great Black Lie**. This is the ancient Islamic lie that Allah will abundantly love you and bless you if you will first aggressively murder Allah's other children while murdering yourself. Note also that many of these murdered children of Allah are loving, peaceful and obedient Moslems. Beyond any doubt, the murderous belief in the concept of Ancient Jihad is an insidious endeavor to snare the intellectually challenged, the emotionally retarded, and the volitionally wicked. Truly and surely, the act of jihad is the ultimate cosmic act of hypocrisy.

The truth is Allah loves all His children equally, including every sentient human being on Earth – even the MIF's. Nevertheless, the MIF's proclaim themselves to be “Allah's Holy Warriors.” Can a warrior really be holy? Surely, “holy warrior” is the absolute ultimate oxymoron.

From the American perspective, there are vicious cobras in our beautiful gardens, and these deadly cobras actively seek to destroy America. In truth, this is first and foremost a war of ideologies – the benevolent ideology of modern Democracy pitted against the malevolent ideology of ancient Islamic Jihad. In truth, the MIF's ideology is the Ideology of Antidemocracy, where the MIF's are directly attacking Democracy's Freedom of Religion. The Freedom of Religion is the first freedom of Democracy, thus making it the most important and the most precious of all democratic freedoms. For at the heart of the Freedom of Religion is the freedom to believe as one chooses to believe. But the MIF's want and demand their fellow Moslems to believe and to act as the MIF's want and demand them to be. This is the foundation of the malevolent ideology of the MIF's: “Believe and act as we tell you to believe and act, or we shall kill you, and we shall kill you very violently!!!” Consequently, Democracians and Allah's obedient Moslems are in defense of the MIF's many acts of aggression. The roots of malice have grown deep within the MIF's hearts, thus creating anger and rage that controls their hearts and commands their minds. They're easily recognized by their words and deeds of belligerent animosity. Furthermore, they have become a cancer within the Nation of Islam. The MIF's have repeatedly proven they should be feared.

The MIF's are reprobates to our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator. The word “**reprobate**” means: (1) a depraved, unprincipled or wicked person; and (2) a person rejected by God and who is beyond hope of salvation. The word

“reprobate” should be used very seldom and only then after very careful consideration. Accordingly, the MIF’s wanton and indiscriminate murders of innocent people has reached a point that’s beyond the mercy and redemption of Allah. Without any Godly reflection of love and mercy, the MIF’s murder babies, children, women, the elderly, and the disabled. The MIF’s attack their perceived enemies at weddings, funerals, and Islamic religious celebrations. The MIF’s seek to eliminate the moral threads of humanity, these being sacred threads which weave the moral fabric of all religions and societies. And be sure to realize this truth. These extremely immoral, violent acts of murder are incredible acts of cowardice, thus making the MIF’s both reprobates and extreme cowards. The MIF’s vicious, murderous acts are acts of malevolent chaos. The MIF’s hate all while truly loving no one, and they desire to destroy all they can while they create and build nothing. Truly, the MIF’s are the **ORC’s** of the world, that being the **O**ppressive **R**eprobate **C**owards of the world. Can sanity ever return to the MIF’s?

In the war of ideologies between the Democracians and the MIF’s, this is what the Democracians must convince the MIF’s. The true essence and nature of Allah should be constantly emphasized. **Allah is life! Allah is love! And Allah’s love is unconditional and perfect. Being the very essence of unconditional, perfect love, Allah is also patient, kind and tolerant!** Be sure to know this. Anyone who invokes Allah’s name to justify the aggressive murder of Allah’s obedient and loving children is in direct conflict with Allah’s essence, nature and intentional will. This is the great truth that the Islamic Nation needs to embrace, affirm, and publicly promote. Those who truly, sincerely and genuinely love Allah must become Allah’s Advocates of Love. For the love of Allah, the malevolent ideology of the MIF’s must be totally eradicated from the belief system of Islam. If this cannot be achieved, then mankind shall be eternally enslaved to the malevolent nature of his ancient forefathers where The Law of Conquest and The Law of War forever governed their hearts and minds.

## **The History of Christianity’s Fanaticism**

Now, in the course of history, the Islamic faith isn’t the only religion that has embraced fanatical beliefs that manifested themselves into cruel and violent acts against mankind. The Catholic Church’s Crusades of conquest of the Holy Land are monumental examples of religious fanaticism. In fact, all of the Catholic Church’s Crusades were absolutely appalling; especially the First Crusade where history records the Catholic knights even exercised cannibalism to instill fear in the Moslems. In the year 1095 Pope Urban II exercised the Catholic version of jihad when he initiated the First Crusade. He proclaimed that to die in the Christian conquest of Jesus’ Holy Land was to gain immediate acceptance into Heaven. In

addition, when the knights finally succeeded in their siege of Jerusalem, all of the city's Jews and Moslems were ruthlessly murdered. This included children, women, the elderly, and the disabled.

Didn't our ancient, Christian forefathers know that Jesus taught and lived the elementary principles of love, whereby He specifically taught the Children of Humanity to love their Creator and their fellow sentient human beings? **Jesus also taught the Children of Humanity to love their enemy and to pray for them.** Is this a revelation from God, and if it is, then why was it so quickly forgotten? But more important, why is that great teaching still forgotten today?

And then there were the Catholic's aggressive persecutions against heretics. Mankind should never forget the dreadful, violent and vicious Catholic Inquisitions. What exactly is a heretic? A heretic is a person who holds a belief of heresy. The word "**heresy**" means "an opinion or doctrine at variance with the orthodox or accepted doctrine, especially of a church or religious system." Note that you don't have to be a religionist to be a heretic, and it's profoundly easy to be a heretic. A simple and honest difference of opinion can make you a heretic. Accordingly, everyone is a heretic in some way, somehow and some manner. For over 1,000 years of the Catholic Church's domination, anyone who had a personal belief that was contrary to what the Catholic Church believed and taught was a heretic. History also shows the Holy Roman Catholic Church had many inquisitions. History records the Catholic Inquisitions were primarily driven by the lust for power and the lust for money.

The Catholic Church's hatred for perceived heretics, and the punishment of heretics, was far greater than the Church's violent actions against perceived infidels; that is, people of other world religions. Heresy was a capital crime, and the only form of execution was to be burned at the stake. History also records that while most heretics were quickly consumed by fire, some heretics were slowly roasted, thus taking hours to finally kill the victim. I don't think there was any fear greater than the fear created by the proclamation of a new Catholic Inquisition, and there were many Catholic Inquisitions in search of heretics. This is extremely profound and fearful because it's so incredibly easy to be a heretic. Anyone who openly and actively pursues The Cosmic Truth becomes highly vulnerable to accusations of heresy. Much to the detriment and retardation of Western Civilization, the Catholic Church suppressed the pursuit of truth, especially The Cosmic Truth regarding scientific endeavors.

## **The History of America's Prejudicial Fanaticism**

Lastly, the Catholic Church was not the only Christian institutions that caused great pain and misery upon their fellow sentient human beings. The

Protestant Christians actively connived to justify their blatant murders of Catholics and the exercise of slavery. The Christian Religion Wars occurred throughout Europe, but they were especially violent in the English Isle and Ireland. And this was the European thought regarding the Institution of Slavery. "Well, slavery's in the Bible so it must be acceptable to God to have an Institution of Slavery." The cold, black heart of mankind's dark side can justify mankind's most hideous and violent actions. And of course, America also actively participated in the Institution of Slavery. Emphatically speaking, this is America's bleakest chapter in their short history, whereby the consequences of slavery are still painfully realized today. And the heart of this atrocity was and is racial bigotry. If the Institution of Slavery was somehow reinstated in America today, I wonder what percentage of Americans would be hard core abolitionists? Yet, hate crimes still occur throughout America, and the residue of the Ku Klux Klan still flourishes in various parts of the nation. The KKK was America's domestic terrorists, waving a Bible in one hand while lighting a cross with the other hand. And I thought a cross is supposed to be a symbol of love, forgiveness and reconciliation, but the KKK made it a living symbol of dreaded, agonizing fear.

Ever since our Founding Fathers, one eye of the American collective has always been closed in its practice of the foundational backbone of American Democracy, that being "All men are created equal." Hopefully, that once closed eye is now at least half way opened and America has moved closer to the center of the democratic path of brotherly love, morality and tolerance. And in doing so, the majority of Americans have also moved closer to the intentional will of our GBLC. Only before our Creator are all sentient human beings created equal, and that equality is directly reflected by the equal measure of God's love for all His children. And be sure to realize this great truth. God's children include all races, all nations, all cultures, all religions, all genders, all sexual orientations, and all other means of human comparison and social division. Meanwhile, never forget the pain and suffering that religious fanaticism has poured upon mankind. Always beware of the religious fanatic who falsely invokes the name of God in his detrimental pursuit of his malevolent religious, political and social ideologies.

### **The Man-In-Moment Factor (The MIM Factor)**

It's very important to realize we're not our forefathers, and we're especially not our ancient forefathers. Accordingly, we're not obligated to believe and practice what our forefathers believed and practiced, especially what our ancient forefathers believed and practiced. And this especially applies to religious beliefs and practices. Throughout mankind's history, religious beliefs have always been saturated with superstition. As a result, irrationality ruled mankind's ancient religions. Even today, old religious superstitions significantly influence mankind's religions. However, as time passed, mankind became more enlightened in all areas

of mankind's domains. This includes mankind's social, religious, political and economic domains. Surely and truly, mankind has evolved far beyond his forefathers, and especially beyond his ancient forefathers.

Now, every generation is subject to the social, religious, political and economic systems that prevail at the moment of the generation's existence. Accordingly, every generation is subject to their specific "**man-in-moment factor**," which I abbreviate as "the MIM Factor." As an example, mankind today would not begin to tolerate and allow the institution of slavery. However, in the long standing run of history, the institution of slavery was a highly acceptable practice among all of mankind's emerging societies and empires. The former active practice of slavery was a man-in-moment factor. Today's active exclusion of the allowance of the institution of slavery is today's man-in-moment factor. Nevertheless, it's well documented that the limited practice of slavery still exists in certain undeveloped parts of the world. Not all is well in the world, especially where mankind's ancient malevolent beliefs are still practiced.

Here's the point I'm trying to make. Every generation evolves beyond the evil and vile man-in-moment factors of their forefathers. Mankind today, as an evolving global civilization, is a much improved cosmic entity than our forefathers, and especially our ancient forefathers. Evil and vile man-in-moment factors of mankind's past were allowed by our loving Creator, and that's because our Creator knew the upper limits of our forefathers' spiritual potential. But as mankind evolves into a higher spiritual being, our Creator expects more from His enhanced and enlightened children. It's mankind's constant responsibility to improve and enhance his man-made religions. Old beliefs and practices that are degrading and depraving to others must be eradicated and quietly purged from human practice. In a similar manner, all man-made religions must grow in truth, in spirit, in love, in patience, in kindness, in morality, in righteousness, and in world peace. Today's Children of Humanity has been given an abundance of spiritual enlightenment. And to whom much has been given, much is required.

## **2.10 Theology, Science and Personal Belief**

This has actually been a theological discussion, whereby the word "**theological**" means "of, pertaining to, or involved with theology." So then, what does the word "theology" mean? The root syllable "theo" comes from the ancient Greek word "theos," which is the Greek word for "god." My dictionary spells the word "god" with a lower case "g." When is it proper and correct to use an upper case "G" versus a lower case "g"? Accordingly, the word "**theology**" literally means "**the study of God.**" My dictionary has two meaningful definitions for the word "**theology**": (1) the field of study, thought, and analysis which deals with God, His attributes, and His relations to the universe; and (2) the science or study of

divine things or religious truth. It's noted that the capitalization of the words "God" and "His" are directly from my dictionary. Note also that the second definition defines "theology" as "the science."

I find it extremely interesting how theology and science are interrelated. First, scientific type beliefs that are so readily accepted today were once religious heresies that resulted in public execution by being burned to death. On the other hand, I never heard a minister, priest or a rabbi declare they're scientists actively involved in the study of God. If theology is a science, then is religion also a science? Yet, my dictionary defines theology to be the science of divine things and religious truth. And that makes sense to me! Yet, I always heard religion and science are at odds with each other and are mostly incompatible. Also, it seems to me most hardcore scientists tend to be atheists and macro evolutionists. Are the words "theory" and "theology" related?

Perhaps religion and science are truly related because they're both Institutions of Faith. The truth is many people put their faith in science. My train of thought focuses upon one great question. Where do you place your faith and trust – in God or in science? Of course, it's realized the Institution of Science is a man-made Institution. Therefore, the faith and trust in science is actually the faith and trust in mankind, an obviously flawed and imperfect creature. On the other hand, I do believe theology and science are overcoming their natural, historical conflicts and differences. Theology and science are definitely coming closer together. And I firmly believe the scientific pursuit of truth shall one day have a reasonable faith in the living reality of mankind's Creator. I already believe the reality of God makes much more plausible sense than the random and tenuous act of macro evolution. So then, if theology is a branch of science, then is science a branch of theology? Now, imagine that! Science is actually a religion onto itself.

## **The Expanded Spectrum of the Study of God**

Finally, there are many interesting English words that are derived from the root word "theo." Here's a list of such words along with their definitions. Again, I have been careful to copy the definitions as my dictionary defines these various words. Be sure to note when the word "god" is spelled with the lower case "g" versus an upper case "G". Also, sometimes the word "gods" is specifically used. It appears to me the use of the word "God" is very subjective, arbitrary and preferential. What's really meant by this word "God?" Whoops! I mean "god." And is it ever correct to use the word "gods" or the word "Gods?" It seems to me theology is Divinely Baffling!

1. Theocracy: a system of government by a religious order.
2. Theodicy: a vindication of divine attributes, such as holiness and justice, in allowing or establishing the existence of physical and moral evil.
3. Theogony: the origin of the gods.
4. Theolatry: the worship of a deity.
5. Theomachy: a battle with or among the gods.
6. Theomania: insanity in which a person believes himself to be God or chosen by God.
7. Theopathy: religious emotion excited by the contemplation of God.
8. Theophany: a manifestation or appearance of God to man.
9. Theosophy: any of various forms of philosophical or religious thought in which claim is made to a mystical insight into the divine nature or divine revelations.

If you're like me, you never heard of most of these words. . I can't even properly pronounce the words. Have you ever heard of the words "hagiocracy" and "manism?" I've included these words because I believe the definitions provide food for thought that's worthy of personal reflections. Reflections of our Creator are very vast and involve many aspects to consider. Furthermore, knowledge provides its own reward for those who are internally motivated to pursue The Cosmic Truth. Lastly, I find it very interesting that my dictionary does not include the word "theophobia." But then, what would it mean? Would it mean "the fear of God," or "the fear of religion," or would it be more appropriate to mean "the fear of religious fanaticism?"

## **2.11 The Love of God Versus the Fear of God**

This discussion regarding theology leads to another interesting issue. Should you come to your loving Creator in love, or should you come to your loving Creator in fear? It's actively taught: "The fear of God is the beginning of wisdom." "Fear not he who can destroy the body, but fear He who can destroy the body and the soul." Few people are aware there is a positive, proactive form of fear as well as the dreaded, negative, conactive form of fear. The human drive of self-preservation is built upon proactive fear. Everyone reasonably fears that which could possibly hurt them. Would you fear and respect cobras that live in your garden? The question to consider is this. When does a specific fear become excessive, thus growing into a detrimental state of a phobia? A dysfunctional phobia creates a dysfunctional sentient mind which then leads to a dysfunctional

sentient human being. Too much fear can be a very dangerous thing. But then, can too much love be a very dangerous thing? Can and does our Creator excessively love His children? I don't believe that's true because TSG Love also concerns itself with the obligation of fulfilling the Responsibilities of Life. Fulfilling the Responsibilities of Life leads a person to a sensation of fulfillment and satisfaction. In reflection of these thoughts, consider the following reflections.

1. The Natural Fear of Theocracy: The word "theocracy" conjures fear for many people, especially Democracians. Wherever you see theocracy, theophobia quickly follows. Surely and truly, history has proven that it's very good to separate Church and State, but that does not mean you should isolate and insulate the Church from the State. In addition, there are in this world some theocracies that are very gracious, benevolent and loving.
2. The Natural Fear of Theomania: Theomania also causes theophobia, especially for the daily citizen who incurs the wrath of loveless religious fanatics who declare themselves to be God's chosen ones, and especially God's holy warriors. If there are holy warriors in heaven, then there must also be holy wars in heaven. Otherwise, what would heavenly warriors do if there were no wars in heaven? On the hand, would heaven really be heaven if there were wars in heaven, for I always heard heaven is a place where there are no wars.
3. The Natural Fear of Theopathy: Theopathy creates fear in many people, especially when you see TV news coverage showing religious fanatics in a wild and crazy emotional state; that is, a religious frenzy. All intellectual powers are enslaved to emotional passions when a person enters into a psychological state of theopathy. When the normal psychological guards are totally suppressed, the horrifying beast that slumbers within the soul of man is then released, and delirious chaos quickly follows. All rational, sensible and logical senses are extinguished, and the ability to exercise true, genuine love becomes impossible. It makes me wonder if theopathy is the main ingredient in the psychological nature of the MIF's, especially when they kill others by blowing themselves to pieces. On the other hand, I know the power of deep-seated revenge twists the mind and warp the soul of anyone who vigorously pursues revenge. To the MIF's, revenge is a duty and an obligation to Allah.
4. Fulfilling Allah's Intentional Will: Isn't heaven supposed to be governed by patience, kindness, care, concern, compassion, love, tolerance, peace, harmony and tranquility? And aren't these ethereal elements also the attributes of Allah? And aren't the Children of Humanity supposed to emulate Allah? Surely and truly, patience, kindness, care, concern, compassion, love, tolerance, peace, harmony and tranquility are attributes that should be emulated by every person on earth. This includes the Democracians and the MIF's. I have come to believe in one profound truth. If all religionists would first and sincerely pursue

the intentional will of our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator, then patience, kindness, care, concern, compassion, love, tolerance, peace, harmony and tranquility would flow upon the nations like a gentle rain that flows upon a parched land. This would surely create pleasures and prosperity that all sentient human beings could and should enjoy. Thereby, we're all encouraged by our GBLC to choose love and not fear; for in the final analysis, love and fear is all there really is.

## **2.12 The Good & Simple Beauty of Benevolent Religions**

In spite of the negative history of world religions and the current fanaticism of the Islamic MIF's, it's very important to embrace the potential goodness and value of mankind's organized world religions. All of the negative perspectives of religion that I have addressed are not really representative of the intended elements of true, sincere and genuine theistic religion. The brutal acts of belligerent religionists are the consequences of fanatical religious maniacs; that is, theomaniacs. Theomaniacs use religion as a means to fulfill their lusts for power, money and other wanton elements that mankind selfishly craves. It's emphatically stated that religion within itself is not bad or evil. Evil is derived from the hearts of men, not from the doctrines and dogmas of organized religions. You must always remember that a fanatic is a fanatic whether he's a religious fanatic or a secular fanatic.

When a religion embraces, affirms and promotes the pursuit of The Cosmic Truth and the exercise of Cosmic Love, morality, tolerance and self-discipline, then the religion properly and beneficially serves mankind. Clearly in my mind and spirit, I see mankind's world religions consistently leading their followers to the enlightenment of truth and love. And this truly is a good thing; in fact, it's a very, very good thing. Beyond any doubt, there are billions of People of Faith who are truly loving, caring, concerned and compassionate, thus making them a tremendous benefit to all of mankind. And these good, beautiful People of Faith come from all religious affiliations, especially including Islam, Judaism and Christianity – these three being the center of the world's Great Religious Conflict.

Hopefully, I have succeeded in explaining why I have some very serious misgivings about the word "God." Nevertheless, the living reality of our Creator is not diminished or altered just because I don't like the word "God," or because of the malicious history of world religions, or because of the current malicious actions of the Islamic MIF's. Most unfortunately, evil religious fanatics have given our Creator a very bad reputation to many people. In spite of this negative perspective of world religions, here's the profound truth that you must seriously and reverently consider.

**Mankind's Creator either exists or He doesn't exist; but if He does exist, then you better seriously and reverently stop and think about it.** Now is the time to reflect and ponder upon our GBLC's essence and nature. Does our Creator really exist? Is our Creator the essence and nature of love, and is His love perfect? Is the Lord of Life honorable? And has He earned the right to have your heartfelt gratitude and praise? Perhaps now is the time to pray and meditate. Listen to the whisper of your Creator. "Be still and know that I am." Only by prayer and meditation can you exercise your sentient faculty of spiritual intuition. And only by your exercise of spiritual intuition shall you be able to sense the living reality of our gracious, benevolent, and loving Creator. And in the end what shall you gain? You shall gain the awesome power and the magnificent glory of Cosmic Love.

My friends, I hope you reverently consider the awesome reality of mankind's Creator, and in the process of your considerations you have a spiritual experience that leads you to the inner knowledge and certainty of the existence of our GBLC. But if this is not the case, then you still have to face the decision to embrace unconditional sentient-love or to reject it. I sincerely hope you find the Wisdom of Sentient-Love to be your greatest asset and that you then exercise sentient-love for your ultimate benefit and for the ultimate benefit of those you love. To all my friends I say, let us all **Luv & Liv** to our fullest capacity.

## Part 3

# Mankind's Sentient Nature

## 3.1 You Are a Sentient Human Being

---

Let's stop and think, reflect and ponder upon the essence and nature of "the human being." What is the fundamental essence and nature of a human being? To reflect upon our human nature and our human experience is actually an exercise of self-examination by inner personal reflections. You can also learn very much about yourself by observing your fellow human beings. This includes human beings that are currently alive as well as human beings of the past. By participating in this cognitive exercise we also take heed of the Wiseman's warning: "An unexamined life is not worth living." So then, what are the fundamental concepts of the life-nature of the Children of Humanity? As recorded in history, the vast majority of mankind's deep-thinkers have one common conclusion.

Mankind is no mere animal, nor is mankind some glorified form of an animal. Mankind is a personified life-entity that far exceeds the essence and nature of the animal kingdom. Mankind's true essence and nature originates within the spiritual kingdom; thus discerning the difference between the personification of mankind (a state of an ethereal spirit and soul) and the animation of mankind (a state of a glorified, corporeal animal). Accordingly, mankind has faculties of spiritual senses that are far different from corporeal animals. These special senses allow the human being to sense the spiritual world and its ethereal nature. And it's in the spiritual world where mankind discovers his true identity. Mankind is a life-force that's capable of readily changing himself, other sentient human beings, and his environment.

## The Sentient Human Being

The essence and nature of humanity is something very special. If you seriously stop and think, reflect and ponder, then you come to realize you're a Child of Humanity, and collectively, we are the Children of Humanity. Mankind is specially created with a specific meaning, value and purpose that's unique within the Cosmos. By virtue of your existence, **you are a sentient human being**. And when you finally realize and internalize this great truth, then you confidently evolve to know you're on the path to understanding the MVP of Life; that is, the meaning, value and purpose of life. So then, what does the word "sentient" really mean, and what does it mean to be a "sentient human being?"

## **Definition of the Word “Sentient”**

As an adjective, the word “**sentient**” means: (1) having power of perception by the senses; and (2) characterized by sensation. As a noun, the word “sentient” means: (1) one who or that which is sentient; and (2) the conscious mind. It's noted that the sentient nature is addressed as sentient senses and sentient powers, and the most powerful sentient sense is the sense of **spiritual intuition**.

Accordingly, sentient human beings have personal powers that give them the ability to sense their environment – both their tangible, visible environment and their intangible, invisible environment. In other words, you have the power to sense your celestial, spiritual world. Furthermore, your sentient nature includes your conscious mind and your subconscious mind, which collectively is called the sentient mind. Your sentient mind allows you to discern The Cosmic Truth with faithful confidence. Accordingly, it's very important to realize you have an abundance of senses that far exceeds the physical senses of sight, sound, smell, taste and touch. You also have ethereal senses that include emotional senses, intellectual senses, volitional senses, moral senses, spiritual senses, and other ethereal senses that you're not even aware of – at least not yet. As an example, when you have an important decision to make regarding an important element of your life, and you reject one possible choice because “it just doesn't feel right,” that's your sentient senses helping you make the best decision. In a similar manner, you may respond to your decision making by saying “I just want to sleep on it.” That too is your sentient senses helping you make the best decision. Your sentient mind has the ability to keep working even while you're sleeping.

## **Definition of a “Sentient Human Being”**

A “**sentient human being**” is a higher level, sentient cosmic life-entity and life-force that:

1. Possesses intelligence, volition, emotions and free-will.
2. Is a unique, distinct and autonomous personality in the Cosmos.
3. Is aware and conscious of one's self-existence and self-identity.
4. Has mental and sentient powers that are critically enhanced by physical and ethereal senses, thus being capable of achieving higher levels of cosmic understanding.

The Children of Humanity are truly elevated beings of the Cosmos, thus being sentient creatures that are far above the animal kingdom. If this becomes a conviction of your heart, then you take a great stride forward to achieving personal self-value, self-worth, self-esteem, and even self-love. All four of these inner personal, ethereal elements are very critical to personal fulfillment and satisfaction. I call them the Four Jewels of the Soul. Accordingly, you're now on a path to securing the deep-seated, internal sensations of sentient satisfaction and fulfillment. These are ethereal possessions of the soul and spirit, and these are the greatest possessions any sentient being can possess.

## **Sentient Senses and ESP**

The science of psychology calls mankind's ethereal senses "extra sensory perception," better known as ESP. Everyone has some level of ESP, even if that level is too minimal to readily detect. Also, the minimum threshold sensation of ESP is a very mundane sensation; a sensation so mundane that we don't readily detect it. It's exactly like breathing. How often are you self-aware of your breathing? You become aware of your breathing only under certain circumstances. Likewise, you become aware of your ESP only under certain circumstances. Have you ever had a deep-seated feeling or sensation that you can't explain and you just can't shake? People who consistently practice prayer and meditation often talk about deep-seated sensations that they personally contribute to the spiritual realm. That's your mundane power of ESP communicating with yourself.

The truth is everyone has some level of ESP that's simply revealed by the ethereal powers of prayer and meditation. The ethereal powers of prayer and meditation are not superstitious mumbo-jumbo, but are a real human phenomenon that's well documented by scientific investigation. You only need to exercise your sentient powers to know this is The Cosmic Truth. Those who consistently exercise the powers of prayer and meditation understand more, achieve more, succeed more, fail less, fear less, and complain less. They're on a path to understanding the MVP of Life, and thus live life with an immense sense of satisfaction and fulfillment. These people truly are on a path of spiritual enlightenment. Now, how about you? Do you live life with a sense of satisfaction and fulfillment? Would you like to live life with an immense sense of satisfaction and fulfillment? Then start exercising your ethereal senses.

Collectively, your physical and ethereal senses are your sentient senses; and when they're effectively exercised, they become the reflective powers of your sentient mind. This is a spiritual power that goes far beyond the simple perceptions of your physical environment. This is an inner personal power that allows you to perceive your ethereal environment, thus enabling you to reflect, contemplate and wonder about your spirit, your soul, and your very existence. **The exercise of your**

**sentient reflections is the utilization of your spiritual intuition.** Truly and surely, the ethereal power of spiritual intuition is the primary sentient faculty that separates mankind from animal. We are our gracious Creator's children!

## **Sentient Human Beings and Sentient Beings**

Sentient human beings are a specific subgroup of sentient beings. And I personally believe the Cosmos is full of a wide variety of different types of sentient beings. As an example, angels and demons are a specific subgroup of sentient beings. Of course, it's a popular belief throughout the world that angels and demons are the same type of sentient being. The only difference between the two types is a function of loyalty to their Creator. Demons are considered to be fallen angels who willfully chose to rebel against their Celestial Creator. I also believe the Cosmos contains many different types of sentient beings that will absolutely astound the Children of Humanity. Could today's space SciFi actually be true?

If you stop and think about life in the Cosmos, it can easily "blow your mind." Is sentient life scattered throughout the Cosmos, and if it is, then how many types of sentient beings has The Lord of Life created? Does He create creatures that are not sentient and autonomous but still human in nature? Are robots an active element within the Cosmos, and are there robots with true emotions and volition? Are there humanoid type creatures with artificial intelligence but lacking emotions and free-will? Everyone is aware of and awed by stories of angels and demons, the ET phenomenon, and all of the SciFi stories that are told in movies and on television. And the make-up artists receive Oscars and Emmys for the wonderful creatures they design and create including aliens, predators and Jedi Knights. But what types of creatures really do exist within the Cosmos? Is the Cosmos filled with malevolent creatures as well as benevolent creatures?

As a result of my personal reflections, I have come to believe mankind is a very unique creature within the Cosmos and was created for a very special and specific purpose. There are many stories throughout antiquity of a heavenly rebellion against God. Were the Children of Humanity created for the specific purpose of demonstrating our Creator's mercy and reconciliatory love, thus proving to the rebellious beings that God is love? I sense these wayward creatures are sentient beings, but not sentient human beings. By exercise of my spiritual intuition, I do sense there's an element of truth regarding this matter.

Have you ever wondered how many planets like earth are in the Cosmos? I personally like the concept that planet earth is a "**birth sphere**;" that is, a terrestrial planet specifically used for the creation and development of sentient human beings. The Children of Humanity are developed for the specific purpose of being active and creative collaborators with their Celestial Father. The best is yet to come for

those who truly, sincerely and genuinely love their Creator. I also sense there are many birth spheres within the Cosmos. I once read in an old college text book on astronomy that our galaxy has over a billion stars and the universe has over a billion galaxies. With the advent of the Hubble telescope, these defined quantities have increased astronomically. The vastness of our galaxy is beyond human comprehension, thus making any grasp of the universe totally and absolutely meaningless to the human mind. That's why I use the word "Cosmos," which my intentional use of the word means "a complete, orderly, and harmonious system." Is our Creator's Cosmos just our galaxy or the entire universe? I surely don't know the answer to this question, and it doesn't really matter to me. For me personally, our galaxy is sufficient size to serve all of my eternity.

Just for fun, let's estimate how many birth spheres may exist within our galaxy. Let's allow there to be one billion stars (1,000,000,000) in our galaxy. Let's also allow just one percent (0.01) of those stars to have a planet with the ability to sustain human life that's similar to our planet earth. The answer is then calculated as follows.

$$1,000,000,000 \times 0.01 = 10,000,000 \text{ (ten million birth spheres)}$$

Now, that's a lot of birth spheres. And what would be the various appearances of the sentient human beings that are born and evolved on these ten million birth spheres? Could there be physical creatures that evolved from birds, or fish, or cats, or dogs, or insects, or whatever your imagination can dream? The SciFi industry has already done a pretty good job exercising their imaginations. At the conclusion of my reflections regarding this little exercise, I'm left in a state of awe and my mind recalls one of apostle Paul's greatest statements. I have expanded the original statement by using some of my own terminology. "What the eye has not seen, or the ear has heard, **or that which can be conceived in the hearts of mankind**, awaits those who truly, sincerely and genuinely love their Creator." Reflect deeply upon your sentient nature and your special place in the Cosmos. You are of great value and great potential that's truly worthy of a child of your Divine Creator. Look forward and with great optimistic joy to the world-to-come. Again I say, our best is yet to come and is patiently awaiting those who embrace love in it full power and glory. Finally, let me ask you just one last question. How many birth spheres do you want to visit as a celestial star trekker?

## **3.2 Sentient Human Beings and the Meaning of Life**

What is life really all about, and can I make any sense of life? What is the real meaning, value and purpose of life? You'll never encounter more perplexing questions than these Life Questions. And everyone knows there's no objective, definitive and finite answers to these soulful questions. The answers are always

personal and fall within the realm of soft, subjective, preferential beliefs versus the realm of hard, objective, factual knowledge. Nevertheless, you should never stop searching for the answers to these questions just because the task is filled with personal difficulty and intellectual uncertainty. It's our sentient nature to pursue an understanding of the meaning, the value and the purpose of live.

Deep within your heart you already know life is a difficult struggle. In fact, I believe we're born to struggle, whereby those who are the strongest are usually the ones who struggle the most. That in itself is a key element in understanding the MVP of Life. Ultimately, you learn that understanding is not necessarily an achievement, but instead, it's a goal. For many people, it's the process of achieving the goal that's most memorable and valuable. Living life is an experience onto itself, and each of us is called to glean all that we can learn from our individual life experiences. In this manner we build up our confidence in our understanding of life. On the other hand, there are some people who secure an unshakeable confidence in achieving their personal answers to these great Life Questions. You can even see this in their eyes, their body language, and the way they talk and walk. I call this phenomenon "the grace of ultra spiritual confidence." Meanwhile, it's important to know and remember that "the threshold of spiritual confidence" is a magnificent reward unto itself. And this is something that's easily achieved simply by exercising your spiritual intuition. While life remains to be a difficult struggle, it's much easier to bear when you're truly committed to understanding the MVP of Life.

## **Sentient Human Beings and Spiritual Activation**

It's a common belief among most manmade religions – if not all manmade religions – that a person is born with a dormant spirit. One of the main purposes of the terrestrial life is to awaken our dormant spirit. To awaken your spirit is to activate your spirit. The internalization of mankind's spirituality has been called "**the germination of the Word of Truth.**" The Word of Truth comes from the Spirit of Truth, and the Spirit of Truth is the Holy Spirit. In the gospel of John, chapter 16, Jesus is talking to His disciples about sending the Holy Spirit, whom He also calls "the Helper." In John 16: 13 Jesus states, "*But when He, the Spirit of truth, comes, He will guide you into all the truth.*" Another verse that's related to the spiritual concepts of truth is from John 8: 31 and 32, "*If you abide in My word, then you are truly disciples of Mine; and you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*" Let The Cosmic Truth take root in your spiritual heart.

The germination of the Word of Truth is all that's required for a sentient human being to become spiritually enlightened; or in other words, to become "**spiritually activated.**" To the chagrin of many, this is what Christianity calls "**to be born again.**" I deeply believe mankind is first born of the flesh and is then

hopefully born of the spirit. And it's good and important to know there are many doorways that lead to spiritual activation. There are many spiritual doors to the human heart, and the Spirit of Truth has many keys that can open these doors. When a child of our Creator opens one of their doors to their heart, then the Holy Spirit enters. This is called in Christianity **the indwelling of the Holy Spirit**. The indwelling of the Holy Spirit awakens the dormant spirit of the sentient human being and that human being is now spiritually activated. The loving symbiotic relationship with our gracious Creator intensifies, and thus increases the spiritual gifts of the Holy Spirit. These gifts include love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness and self-control (Galatians 5: 22).

As a spiritualist, I want to address Christianity's excessive and unduly use of the phrase "born again." I personally believe Christianity doesn't have a monopoly on heaven or to the access to our Creator. The aggressive proselytization by self-professed born again Christians is often perceived as being obnoxious, obtrusive and rude. Fortunately, not all Christians have this obtrusive born again mentality. To truly love your neighbor you must first be sensitive, tolerant and respectful of your neighbor's spiritual and religious beliefs. I also deeply believe in the democratic doctrine regarding the Freedom of Religion: "**Each according to the dictates of his own conscience.**" In the reflection of this matter, I personally favor the phrase "spiritual activation" instead of the phrase "born again." All true and loving theists are spiritually activated sentient human beings, and it doesn't matter which manmade religion (if any) the theist is associated with. In addition, I personally believe you don't even have to be a self-proclaimed theist in order to be spiritually activated. You shall know a spiritually activated person by the fruits of their love and the gifts of the Holy Spirit.

Now, spiritual activation is achieved by the exercise of a person's sentient senses of sight or sound. This includes celestial sensations of sight and sound as well as terrestrial sensations of sight and sound. Accordingly, the germination of the Word of Truth occurs within the spiritual mind and not within the physical mind. And it doesn't matter if you envision the Word of Truth or if you hear the Word of Truth. In other words, seeing is believing, and let those with ears hear. Either sentient sensation is usually effective and is also equally effective. Now, how do you know you've been spiritually activated? Spiritual activation becomes a "state of being" in which the person is actively interested in the well-being of all other people and of Life itself. A spiritually activated person is very interested in The Cosmic Truth and consistently exercises true, sincere and genuine love. In addition, your sense of spiritual intuition becomes attuned to The Cosmic Truth. You literally come to know The Cosmic Truth with spiritual certainty. And you can also recognize a spiritually activated person by their attributes of concern, care and compassion. These are attributes of a person who has a good, righteous, moral,

tolerant and loving character. Spiritual activation directly leads to good character. Now, how about you? Are you spiritually enlightened and spiritually activated? Do you want to be spiritually enlightened and spiritually activated?

## **Sentient Human Beings and Good, Moral Character**

When you stop and ponder about your personal life experiences then you realize there are external life forces that forge your personal life experiences. Upon further contemplations you become aware these personal life experiences provide the basis for your personal perspectives of life. Now, realize this great truth. Your personal perspectives of life forge your deep-seated beliefs and paradigms that become manifested into your thoughts, your words, and your deeds. This is a reflection of your **inner personhood**, which is readily known and understood by your loving Creator. It's also very important to know sentient human beings cannot conceal lies or deceptions from their omniscient Creator. Now, your words and deeds also define the essence and nature of your character. This is a reflection of your **outer personhood**, which is readily known and understood by your fellow sentient human beings. Here's a very important question to consider. Does your outer personhood match your inner personhood? Are you "true to yourself," or are you a loathsome hypocrite?

Be sure to grasp the extreme subjectivity of the phrase "personal life experiences." It's self-evident that all personal perspectives of life are saturated with personal subjectivity. This is why no two people believe and think exactly alike. There are always some variations of personal perspectives of life. Such variations range from very minor differences to very major differences. Sometimes these differences can even be diametrically opposing differences which may ultimately lead to physical confrontation. Too often the evil ethereal forces of belligerent animosity conquer the sentient mind. Have you ever had your sentient mind emotionally hijacked, whereby you say things and do things that you eventually regret? The difficulties and frustrations of life can make any person's "mind snap." Truly, life is a difficult struggle. And for people with a sentient disability, life's struggles can be very challenging. Nevertheless, each individual person is responsible for the person they become. You are responsible for your own character and the person you are.

Now, what are the ethereal elements that cause the differences between personal perspectives of life? Truly and surely, some perspectives of life are founded upon truth and righteousness while other perspectives of life are founded upon falsehoods and distortions, and sometimes outright, bold, black lies and intentional deceptions. All too often a person selfishly believes what he or she wants to believe even though their beliefs are unjustly detrimental to other people. The objective truth is self-evident to a healthy sentient mind, but the disabled

sentient mind creates suffering and misery to innocent victims as well as themselves. Could this difference of mentality be the source for the dichotomy of good and evil? As an example, malicious murder is objectively self-evident to be an evil and unrighteous act. But what is the murderer's thought process that leads the murderer to commit such a dastardly act? What motivates a murderer, and why did the murderer allow his character become an agent of life's dark side? On the other hand, why does a good and noble person choose to pursue truth and to exercise love?

In reflections of this great dichotomy, I've come to believe the understanding of the MVP of Life is founded upon two basic principles: (1) the true, sincere and genuine pursuit of The Cosmic Truth; and (2) the true, sincere and genuine acceptance of The Cosmic Truth. Too many people refuse to believe The Cosmic Truth in spite of its objective self-evidence. Subsequently, they live life in a state of self-denial. I should also note that it's highly obvious and self-evident that The Cosmic Truth is not always objective or self-evident. On the other hand, there are times and conditions when The Cosmic Truth is objective and self-evident, such as in the case of malicious murder. Where objectivity ends and subjectivity begins can be very difficult to discern and is often a source of hot, contentious arguments. And such arguments are usually the result of diametrically opposing ideologies. Lastly, you have to wonder if a sentient mind is subject to sentient damage, thus creating a defective and dysfunctional sentient human being. As an example, what drives a person to be a mass murderer, a serial killer, a vicious rapist, a malevolent pedophile, or any other form of sadistic degradation and depravation? Are they beyond help, cure and reconciliation? Surely, these sentiently defective persons are the reprobates of society.

I truly wish terrestrial life was free of the natural physical and sentient defects that plague mankind. This may not totally eliminate evil, but it would go a long way to negating a significant portion of the effects of evil. Meanwhile, each child of humanity must face the great challenges and difficulties of life. But you don't have to face the difficulties of life alone. We must work together to help nullify the powers of evil and to promote the development of good character. We need all the good, righteous, moral, tolerant and loving sentient human beings which the Children of Humanity can muster. And we must always provide a living hope that every person has the ability to overcome all of their disadvantages which the terrestrial life has dealt them. This is the power of the pursuit of truth and the exercise of love. Let this great paradigm be the basis for the development of your character. By embracing this loving paradigm, then you'll never allow the negative elements of life be the forces that forge your character.

## **Spiritual Disposition and the Human Heart**

Let's stop and consider the essence and nature of mankind's spiritual disposition. There are three types of spiritual disposition: the atheist, the agnostic and the theist. Here's a simple and general description of each respective archetype. An atheist is a person who adamantly believes mankind's Creator does not exist. An agnostic is a person who lacks significant confidence that mankind's Creator does, or does not, exist. A theist is a person who adamantly believes mankind's Creator does exist. These three specific "master-beliefs" are associated with the heart of the individual and the motivation of the individual.

1. **The Atheist**: In a truly spiritual sense, an atheist has "**no-heart**" for mankind's Creator, and therefore has "**no motivation**" to have a relationship with mankind's Creator. As a result, the atheist has an "**independent relationship**" with mankind's Creator. The phrase "independent relationship" is actually an oxymoron in that an independent relationship is absolutely void of any type of relationship. If there was any form of a relationship, then that would terminate the independent relationship and would then form a dependent relationship. Another perplexing element of the atheist is this. If mankind's Creator does not exist, then how can you even have an independent relationship? You can't have any type of relationship with something that doesn't exist. Needless to say, an atheist is totally void of theistic faith, and therefore, has never exerted his or hers sense of spiritual intuition. Consequently, the atheist's spirit has never been enlightened and activated. As a general rule, you can recognize an atheist by their deep-seated cynical and pessimistic nature.
2. **The Agnostic**: An agnostic only has a "**half-heart**" for mankind's Creator, and therefore only has an "**external motivation**" to have a relationship with the Creator. As a result, the agnostic has a "**dependent relationship**" with the Creator. External motivation is the condition where a reward is given for achieving a specified behavior. As an example, a child who is given money for achieving good school grades is externally motivated. If you take away the reward and the child's grades drop, then you know for certain the child was externally motivated. Relationships that involve external motivation are always conditional relationships. Such relationships are "dependent" upon the external reward. The agnostic's uncertainty of achieving his or hers desired reward becomes the root cause of the agnostic's uncertain and vacillating theistic faith. The agnostic's attempts at exercising his or hers spiritual intuition consistently fails as a result of their anemic faith. As a general rule, you can recognize an agnostic by their excessive skepticism and their highly diminished optimistic nature.

3. The Theist: The theist has a “**whole-heart**” for mankind’s loving Creator, and therefore has an “**internal motivation**” to have a relationship with the Lord of Life. As a result, the theist has an “**interdependent relationship**” with the Creator. First, internal motivation is the condition where an internalized reward is obtained from achieving a desired condition. In other words, internal motivation is self-rewarding. A child who gets good school grades simply because such grades are self-rewarding is an example of an internally motivated student. Second, an interdependent relationship is a relationship that is mutually rewarding to all parties of the relationship. An interdependent relationship involves mutual collaboration whereby all parties mutually benefit from the relationship. Accordingly, an interdependent relationship with our loving Creator is self-rewarding within itself. The theist adamantly wants to be in the presence of our loving Creator and wants to participate in the Creator’s life affairs. And a true, sincere and genuine theist finds ineffable satisfaction and fulfillment simply by being a part of the Creator’s celestial family. Our loving Creator always does His best to make His children feel welcomed and comfortable in His Mansion of Love. Can you imagine meeting and greeting other sentient beings that come from the far flung corners of the Cosmos? As a general rule, you can recognize a theist by their deep-seated and highly confident faith and their highly optimistic nature.

Most unfortunately, our Creator’s wayward children feel immense discomfort in His presence. Even the thought of being in His presence creates feelings of immense discomfort. Is this because of the Creator’s feelings of disappointment in His wayward child, or is it because the wayward child deeply feels shame, guilt and embarrassment? But where are the feelings of regret, remorse and repentance? Regret, remorse and repentance are the three R’s of the cosmic course titled “Introductory Spirituality.” Deep-seated feelings of imperfection and the lack of self-worth, self-value and self-esteem can depress anyone and leave them in a state of loss. And dwelling within their mind is a question that keeps repeating itself like a broken record: “Why didn’t I give my whole-heart to my loving Creator?”

Truly, the benevolent nature of life is self-evident and leads directly to the living reality of our Creator. Where there’s truth, there’s our GBLC. Where there’s love, there’s our GBLC. Where there’s goodness, righteousness and beauty, there too you’ll find our GBLC. And where there’s hope, faith, morality, tolerance, concern, care, compassion, patience and kindness, there also is our GBLC. Each one of these ethereal qualities is like a directional sign placed along the side of life’s great cosmic highway. And here’s the real directional message on each sign: “This is the way to personal satisfaction, fulfillment and enlightenment.” Now, when you find yourself lost – and everyone gets lost somewhere, someday, somehow and some time – remember this great truth. Our Creator’s love is absolutely patient and ultimately kind. Even before the closed gates of heaven, the

Creator's offer of love's reconciliation is unconditional and without limit. If you truly desire the simple goodness, beauty and benevolence of life, then listen carefully and intently to the Creator's loving encouragement, for our Creator speaks softly and subtlety to the human spirit and soul. This is what He says to those in need of reconciliation: "This was not your best game, and I know you can do better – much better. But the game is not yet over. Would you like to stay in the game and do your best?" Truly and surely, the game of life is worth playing, and only those who are willing to play have the opportunity to be a winner. In the game of life, what are you going to be – an active and appreciative participant, or a passive and disgruntled participant, or a lethargic and apathetic spectator? The choice is solely yours. Be sure to answer wisely.

## **Sentient Discontentment, Resentment and Contempt**

**Every sentient human being is exposed to internalized sensations of discontentment, resentment and contempt.** Everyone has experienced these three powerful ethereal attributes, but most people overcome the negative and hostile feelings of discontentment, resentment and contempt. However, if you allow your mind to dwell upon these toxic sentient poisons, then you can easily become emotionally overwhelmed. You literally lose control of your mind. To lose control of your mind is to lose control of your intellect and volition, which are the sources of your rationality and sensibility. And without the attributes of rationality and sensibility, the mind becomes corrupted, which then leads to a defective sentient mind, and ultimately to a dysfunctional sentient mind. In the end, this type of toxic person enters into a state of cynicism, and they become a true-cynic. This is a truly wretched state of being in which despair rules the person's mind and they become totally void of hope. A life without hope is a truly dreadful state. While atheists are most prone to this condition, agnostics can easily slip into a life of hopelessness. On the other hand, theists are naturally inoculated against cynicism because their inner life is founded upon the power of hope. But even the theist can succumb to the negative powers of discontentment, resentment and contempt.

Let's make sure we understand the meaning of these three powerful words "discontentment," "resentment" and "contempt." The word "**discontentment**" means "dissatisfied; or a restless desire or craving for something one does not have." If the discontentment is not overcome by the powers of rationality and sensibility, then discontentment quickly mutates into resentment. The word "**resentment**" means "the feeling of displeasure and indignation at some person because of a personal insult and injury caused by that person." The personal insult and injury may be real or may be a false perception. But when the mind cannot escape its obsession of the resentment, then the resentment slowly grows into contempt. As a result, I believe the atheist's relationship to mankind's Creator is ultimately based upon the atheist's contempt for our Creator. Can an atheist have

contempt for mankind's Creator when he adamantly believes mankind's Creator doesn't exist? Truly, the heart of mankind works in very mysterious ways. The word "**contempt**" means: (1) the feeling with which one regards anything considered mean, vile, or worthless; (2) the state of being despised, dishonored, or disgraced; and (3) a willful disobedience to or open disrespect for higher authority. Synonyms include disdain, scorn, disapproval and disgust. Obviously, the third definition applies to the atheist's contempt for God.

### **3.3 Sentient Human Beings and Sentient Freedom**

I want to address a truly remarkable concept. I sincerely believe the study of mankind's history reveals one monumental conclusion. Mankind has slowly but consistently pursued and gained the awesome sentient quality we call **freedom**. It's more accurately defined as **sentient freedom**, for freedom truly is one of the primary essences of the sentient human being. In fact, I believe sentient freedom is a critical element of all sentient beings. There are two **sentient entities** that create the essence and nature of the sentient human being, these being the **human entity** and the **freedom entity**. The two entities join together to form the sentient human being. If you could remove the freedom entity from the sentient human being, then the freedom nature of the human being would cease to exist, and the human being would become a corporeal android.

Now, the human entity is typical of our Creator's celestial and terrestrial creative nature. The human entity includes the three elements of intelligence, volition and emotions. However, the freedom entity is a divine element of the sentient human being. The freedom entity is the spark of life which is given by the Lord of Life. It's by the gift of the freedom entity that mankind is created in the image of our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator. It's also mankind's freedom entity that makes the Children of Humanity sacred. And because our Creator is free, mankind too is ardently driven to be free. Mankind has always actively pursued the divine essence of his sacred and free nature. Consequently, mankind has slowly evolved to a greater and higher state of freedom. Our ultimate terrestrial state of freedom has yet to come, and it's probably beyond mankind's current powers of conception. And realize this truth also. To embrace this great truth is to become free. The Cosmic Truth shall set you free.

### **Sentient Freedom of the Mind**

The core of freedom is **the Freedom of the Mind**, or in other words, "to have a free-mind." In the purest sense, a free-mind is an open mind, whereby the sentient human being is open to the pursuit of The Cosmic Truth; that is, open to

the honest consideration of all realities of the Cosmos. A truly open mind actively seeks the best for the well-being of all. Accordingly, a truly open mind actively pursues the ethereal elements that liberate the sentient mind. In addition, the open mind actively seeks to be free of falsehoods, prejudices, ignorance, superstitions, and other negative ethereal elements that enslave the sentient mind. In comparison, a closed mind creates falsehoods, prejudices, ignorance, superstitions, and other negative ethereal elements. A mind that's closed to The Cosmic Truth and all that's good and beautiful quickly becomes corrupted by the dark side of life. As history has consistently proved, closed minds have always created degradation and depravation for the People.

Where The Cosmic Truth abides, freedom and love flourish. But where The Cosmic Truth is withheld, denied or insidiously altered, then ignorance, fanaticism and tyranny flourish. Wherever you find tyranny you also find terrorism, and wherever you find terrorism you also find tyranny. It's easy to recognize tyrants and terrorists. They're the ones who treat other people with belligerent animosity. At the heart of every tyrant and terrorist is one ultra selfish motivation. They actively lust for the total domination, control, and command of the People, and especially the command of the People's minds. In their sadistic lust, tyrants and terrorists attempt to force the People to believe and act as they want the People to believe and act. The first casualty resulting from tyrants and terrorists is the death of the free-mind.

Associated with the concept of sentient freedom is the concept of "mankind's natural order," also called "mankind's natural rights," also called "mankind's inalienable rights," and also called "mankind's natural inalienable rights." However, the most popular phrase used today is "mankind's human rights." These are concepts that were incredibly dear to America's founding fathers, and remain incredibly dear to the vast majority of Americans today. It's true to say that sentient freedom is more valuable than life itself, for many good and righteous Americans have given their last full measure of devotion in order to preserve this magnificent human entity of sentient freedom. Why do so many freedom loving sons and daughters possess the will to sacrifice for a higher cause and the greater good? It should also be noted that the pursuit and development of freedom, liberty and democracy started long before Americans created their brand of democracy. Surely and truly, America is the product of the innate and natural human drive for sentient freedom. Meanwhile, it's important to remember that mankind's hard fought freedoms are directly derived from mankind's natural inalienable rights; which include, but are not limited to, Life, Liberty and the Pursuit of Happiness.

## Sentient Freedom Is the Heart of Love

Have you ever stopped to think and reflect about the source of mankind's freedom? I have and here is my personal conclusion. Because our GBLC loves His Children so much, He gives them the gift of sentient freedom. However, in our terrestrial world, sentient freedom is best known as "**free-will.**" Emphatically speaking, **the heart of love is free-will.** Your greatest blessing is your gift of life. Your second greatest blessing is your gift of free-will. And this "love-quality of free-will" is required by our Creator to be exercised in all sentient relationships. If you truly love someone, then you must allow that person to exercise his or hers ethereal gift of free-will. This is a very complex issue that will be discussed in the next chapter. For the time being, consider this reflection. From free-will comes free-choice, and from free-choice comes freedom. Accordingly, your freedom is the direct result of the Creator's love for you, and your greatest freedom is "the freedom of choice" to believe as you personally desire. I'll say this important truth again. You're allowed to believe and disbelieve as you personally choose. This especially includes your freedom to believe or disbelieve in the living reality of mankind's Creator. Likewise, you'll ultimately be given the freedom to choose celestial life or celestial death. And while it's very difficult for the human mind to comprehend this celestial choice, reprobates gladly choose celestial death. In the Kingdom of Love, you are not free to create degradation and depravation for others. Only people with selfless, loving and open minds desire to dwell in the Kingdom of Love, and people with selfish, fearful and closed minds quickly flee from the presence of our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator.

Always remember your freedom is derived from TSG Love. Without sentient-love you would not have freedom; but instead, you would be the enslaved creature that tyrants and terrorists want you to be. Beyond any doubt, love is liberating, but love is not a freedom. Love is a free-choice, and you are free to choose love or to reject love. You have to consider this choice very carefully, and you have to consider this choice many times every day. Every encounter with a fellow human being is an encounter of love, or an encounter of animosity, or an encounter of indifference. And every time you have an encounter with a fellow human being, you have to choose one of these three choices. But beware! Our loving Creator does not accept animosity or indifference in His Kingdom of Love. If you truly choose love, then you'll find yourself consistently exercising patience, kindness, concern, care, compassion and all the other gifts and fruits of love. In this manner, you'll determine if your mind is truly opened or closed, and you'll determine if you truly desire celestial life or celestial death.

## **The Inalienable Freedoms of Sentient Human Beings**

1. **The Freedom of Religion**: the freedom to believe as one chooses to believe. The Freedom of Religion is the first freedom of Democracy; and therefore, is the most important and most precious of all sentient human freedoms. This is because the Freedom of Religion is the freedom to believe as one chooses to believe; this being the foundation of all other beliefs. Surely and truly, each child of humanity has the right to believe in accordance with the dictates of his own or her own conscience. Even an atheist has the right and the freedom to sincerely believe mankind's Creator does not exist. Consequently, no one should be denied, or limited in any manner, the right to the Freedom of Religion. And no one should be bashed, persecuted, condemned, or negatively treated with animosity – especially belligerent animosity – just because of the religion a person is affiliated with. Anyone who denies or limits the Freedom of Religion is not a true Democracian; and therefore, is a second class citizen of Democracy.
2. **The Freedom of Movement**: the freedom to go wherever you want to go, and to do so without the fear that someone is watching you and monitoring your actions. It's right and proper to fear the tyranny of a conniving Big Brother and his fellow goons, thugs and ORC's.
3. **The Freedom of Speech and the Freedom of the Press**: the individual's freedom to publicly define: (1) one's personal beliefs, ideologies and understandings; (2) one's personal desires and preferences along with one's personal promotion of those desires and preferences; and (3) one's personal perceptions of what is believed to be the truth. What good are your beliefs, your thoughts and your ideologies if you're not free to express them in a peaceful, public manner? The Freedom of the Press applies to each individual organization that operates a respective press. The Freedom of the Press is also incredibly important because it's the Watchdog of Democracy. Whenever a dictatorship arises, it first pursues to control the Press, and it then pursues to control the Courts. The first pursuit is the unlawful elimination of the dictator's opposition, and the second pursuit is the legalization of the unlawful elimination of the opposition.
4. **The Freedom of Peaceful Assembly and the Freedom to Peacefully Protest**: the collective freedom to publicly define: (1) the collective's beliefs, ideologies and understandings; (2) the collective's desires and preferences along with the collective's promotion of those desires and preferences; and (3) the collective's perceptions of what the collective believes to be the truth. Note that assemblies and protests can be in support of the current government or can be in the opposition of the current government. The ears of the government should never be deaf to the concerned and benevolent voice of the People.

5. **The Freedom of Economic Security and the Freedom from Want**: the freedom of the individual and the collective to have a minimum level of prosperity and an acceptable Quality of Life that's deserving of a child of the Celestial Father. The mass of the People suffered far too long the Institution of Slavery, the Institution of Peasantry, and massive destitution. A sentient human being was never created to serve as a beast of burden to his own kind. Now, here's a very important paradigm. The Creator's children who are financially prosperous are responsible to create economical opportunities for the mass of mankind, and especially for the financially disadvantaged citizens. The best charity is the act of creating employment opportunities for those in need of employment. The fair and equitable distribution of wealth is the primary responsibility of mankind's "prosperous good stewards," but only the good stewards who harbor true, sincere and genuine love fulfill this Godly responsibility. Mankind may always have their poor, but mankind should never be satisfied having Masses of Destitution. Surely, mankind's greatest challenge is the worldwide elimination of economic destitution.
  
6. **The Freedom From Fear**: the freedom to have a steadfast and unwavering confidence that mankind's gracious and benevolent Creator's Cosmic Love shall never fail. The Freedom from Fear is mankind's most elusive freedom. Most people don't even believe it's an inalienable freedom. All of the freedoms listed above are terrestrial related freedoms, which are also called mankind's outward freedoms. Mankind's outward freedoms are also called liberties and civil liberties. But the Freedom from Fear is a celestial related freedom, which is also called mankind's inward freedom. There are only three types of fear: (1) the inordinate fear of not obtaining that which one deeply desires, which is envy; (2) the inordinate fear of losing that which one deeply desires, which is jealousy; and (3) the inordinate fear of the unknown, which is anxiety. To be free of fear is to overcome fear, and there's only one way of overcoming fear. You must have the heartfelt and deep-seated convictions that our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator is real and that He loves all His children with an unconditional and perfect love. This is mankind's greatest paradigm, and being fortified with this Great Faith, you come to know the precious reality of your being. **All things work to good for those who truly, sincerely and genuinely love their Celestial Father.** This Great Faith even has the power of overcoming the Fear of Death, which is the sentient being's greatest anxiety. **Perfect love casts out all fears.** My gracious and perfect Celestial Father, into your hands I commend and entrust my spirit. Oh Death, where now is your sting?

### **3.4 The Evolution of Democracy and Jesus' Teachings**

I want to share with you a deep, personal belief which I believe is very important. What is the primary force for the evolutionary development of the world's democratic social-political systems? But it should be clearly understood that elements of democracy have been active throughout the history of earth. Being an American, my personal answer is derived from the historical perspectives of western civilization. I personally believe the life and teachings of Jesus are the foundational basis for the evolutionary development of democracy. This is especially true of the democratic nations of western civilization. You also have to include the associated teachings of Jesus' disciples, especially the apostles John and Paul. The influence of the teachings of Jesus and his disciples upon the evolutionary development of Democracy also provides the social-political stratum of Democracy's theistic foundation. If the theistic nature of democracy was removed, then democracy would cease to exist. Again I must emphasize American Democracy is rightfully founded upon the strong beliefs that we, the majority collective, are one nation under God and it's in God that we trust.

I should also note I'm addressing these teachings in a secular manner, whereby Jesus is perceived to be a very good and a very wise philosopher. Indeed, I consider Jesus to be **the Father of the Psychology of Love**. I also profess to be a Christian, thus personally believing Jesus is a spiritual and physical manifestation of our Creator. The personal perception of Jesus is a very complicated and personal matter, even within the Christian religion with all of its splintered societies. And it's good that everyone should adhere to the democratic principle of the Freedom of Religion – to each according to the dictates of his own conscience. I remain very confident The Cosmic Truth shall be crystal clear once you enter the Kingdom of Love. I also know our Celestial Father loves all His children equally, no matter what their terrestrial religious affiliation may be. And because our Creator loves all His children equally, an immense spiritual revelation is revealed. This revelation is now a great democratic truth that all true Democracians hold to be self-evident and to be conceived in Liberty. Consider carefully this great truth: **“All sentient human beings are created equal.”** Jesus and the apostles John and Paul boldly taught the principles of love, especially the principles of brotherly love. Here are some of their teachings about love. I'm also using my personal terminology.

## **Selected Teachings of Jesus**

Jesus boldly taught the principles of love, especially the principles of brotherly love. Here are some of His primary teachings about love.

1. Love God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.
2. Love your neighbor as yourself.
3. Love your enemy and pray for him.
4. Do onto others as you would have them do onto you.
5. A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another, even as I have loved you. If you love me, you will keep my commandment.
6. Just as the Father has loved me, I have also loved you. Abide in my love.
7. Greater love has no one than this, that one lay down his life for his friends.

## **Selected Teachings of the Apostle John**

1. God is love.
2. There is no fear in love.  
But perfect love casts out fear.
3. We love because He first loved us.

## **Selected Teachings of the Apostle Paul**

1. Things which the eye has not seen, things which the ear has not heard, and things which cannot be conceived in the hearts of mankind is what awaits those who truly love their Creator.
2. Neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things past, nor things present, nor things to come, nor power, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate the Children of Humanity from the love of their gracious, benevolent and loving Creator.
3. Let love be without hypocrisy. Abhor what is evil. Cling to what is good.
4. Owe nothing to anyone except to love one another. For he who loves his neighbor has fulfilled the law.

5. If I speak with the tongues of angels, but do not have love, I have become a noisy gong or a clanging cymbal. If I have all faith but do not have love, I am nothing. And if I give all my possessions to feed the poor but do not have love, it profits me nothing.
6. Love is patient, love is kind, and love is not jealous. Love does not brag and is not arrogant. Love does not act unbecomingly, and it does not seek its own. Love is not provoked and does not take into account a wrong suffered. Love does not rejoice in unrighteousness but rejoices with the truth. Love bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, and endures all things. Now abide faith, hope and love, these three. But the greatest of these is love.

## **Democracy Was Forged by Brotherly Love**

The above teachings are just some of the wonderful benefits derived from love. Accordingly, love always sees the best potential in the Children of Humanity, thus seeing what could be and what should be. But in contrast, what was actually being experienced during the course of earth's history? For millenniums, life was virtually a state of terror, tyranny, abuse, torture and other forms of human degradation and depravation. By Caesars, by Kings, by Queens, by Princes, by Lords, by Popes, by warlords, by dictators, or by any other title of social authority, evil despots consistently rose to power and brutally ruled their people, and especially their conquered subjects. And of course, despots always rule by the principles of fear, seldom by the principles of love, and only then by selective, conditional love.

Mankind's previous, predominate nature was more like a vicious animal than a loving sentient human being. Therefore, The Law of Conquest ruled the hearts of mankind, and The Law of the Jungle predominated with pure savagery. In spite of all these human atrocities, somehow and someway the principles of love slowly prevailed. Jesus' teachings of love were latent within the People's collective heart, but these same teachings were very fruitful in the hearts of Jesus' obedient followers. Slowly but surely, the evolutionary tide turned from a predominate state of fear to a predominate state of love. Mankind's true nature is evolving into a higher and higher state of love. And while mankind has a far way to reach his ultimate state of collective love, mankind has evolved far from his early stages of sadism; that is, the lust for being cruel. In fact, remarkable advancements have occurred in just in our last generation.

I'm truly convinced the social-political system we call democracy is derived from the principles of love. In fact, democracy is the ultimate product of the Power and Glory of Love. It's love that moves men's souls, making them willing to uphold the Principles of Love and the Virtues of Freedom. And where

love is exercised unconditionally, there you'll also find The Five Pillars of Democracy: brotherly love, morality, tolerance, self-discipline, and the will to sacrifice for a higher cause and the greater good. The devastating winds of life's dark side may blow like a category 10 hurricane, but The Pillars of Democracy still stand after the storm has blown over. These mighty pillars may flex, but they never break. And what is the source of these five great pillars? All five pillars are derived from the same source, that source being Cosmic Love. Also, be sure to realize this great truth. Democracy and Freedom would cease to exist if the People fail to actively exercise the glorious principles of Cosmic Love. Likewise, the People must always be mindful and watchful of the cancerous effects and insidious nature of conditional love, selective love, and the lust of hedonism. If the People are indifferent to these spiritual cancers, then it's only a matter of time before Democracy collapses within itself. Never underestimate the destructive powers of conditional love, selective love, and hedonism.

## **Democracy's Three Types of Citizens**

All good and loving Democracians consistently adhere to the principles of the Five Pillars of Democracy. It doesn't matter if they're atheists, agnostics or theists. Those who love democracy and practice the principles of democracy are **first class citizens**, which are also called **the good citizens**. Citizens who don't exercise brotherly love, who are immoral, intolerant, who lack discipline, or who are too selfish to sacrifice for the benefit of the People – these citizens are **second class citizens**, also called **the wayward citizens**. Most unfortunately, America's jails and prisons are full of wayward citizens. But there are many more second class citizens out of jail than in jail. Truly, a nation suffers if it has just one wayward citizen. Nevertheless, wayward citizens are equally loved by their Creator; and therefore, we the People are called to love our wayward brothers and sisters. And only by love's reconciliatory power shall wayward citizens find redemption and the ability to truly love others as well as themselves. From the ability to reverently love oneself comes the incredibly important inner attributes of self-worth, self-value and self-esteem. There is great joy when a second class citizen exercises his or hers Freedom of the Mind to freely choose to be a first class citizen. What type of citizen do you choose to be – the good citizen or the wayward citizen? But don't make your decision yet. There's more to consider.

Now, did you know there is a class of citizen who chooses to stand on Democracy's higher ground? This is **the optimum citizen**. The optimum citizen is the citizen who adamantly believes in the living reality of mankind's Creator, thus actively loving the Creator and all His children. Optimum citizens provide a service to the People which atheists and agnostics are incapable of providing. Optimum citizens provide lateral bracing to the Five Pillars of Democracy. **These are the Cross Braces of Hope and Faith**. A nation without the shoring powers of

hope and faith shall eventually collapse upon itself. In addition, hope and faith are required to live with an affirming attitude of optimism and a positive disposition. For the optimum citizen, TSG Love is a state of being, and this state of being leads to a state of living-appreciation. Deep seated in their heart of hearts lives a constant expression of appreciation and gratification: “**Thank you Lord for everything.**” Hereby, let this be understood. If you sincerely desire to know and experience the best that life can offer, then reverently seek to be an optimum citizen. And know this too. The trials and tribulations of life that test your character shall ultimately define your character, and thus define the person you truly are. Did you know there is a class of citizen who chooses to stand on Democracy's higher ground? This is **the optimum citizen**. The optimum citizen is the citizen who adamantly believes in the living reality of mankind's Creator, thus actively loving the Creator and all His children. Optimum citizens provide a service to the People which atheists and agnostics are incapable of providing. Optimum citizens provide lateral bracing to the Five Pillars of Democracy. **These are the Cross Braces of Hope and Faith.** A nation without the shoring powers of hope and faith shall eventually collapse upon itself. In addition, hope and faith are required to live with an affirming attitude of optimism and a positive disposition. For the optimum citizen, TSG Love is a state of being, and this state of being leads to a state of living-appreciation. Deep seated in their heart of hearts lives a constant expression of appreciation and gratification: “**Thank you Lord for everything.**” Hereby, let this be understood. If you sincerely desire to know and experience the best that life can offer, then reverently seek to be an optimum citizen. And know this too. The trials and tribulations of life that test your character shall ultimately define your character, and thus define the person you truly are.

## **The Daily Citizen and the Challenges of the Poor**

The daily citizen is neither rich nor famous and lives a life of obscurity within the mass of mankind. The collective of daily citizens represents the vast majority of the People, and their unified political power is the greatest social power on earth. Now, if you examine the economic profile of the collective of daily citizens, then you would see there's a significant percentage of daily citizens who live in the lower end of the economic spectrum. Life is a very difficult struggle for everyone, but life is extremely challenging for economically disadvantaged citizens. The challenges of being poor go far beyond economical challenges. Being poor is inherently chained to several additional challenges – social, political, moral, and spiritual challenges. As a result of these excessive challenges, a small percentage of disadvantaged citizens succumb to the temptations of life's dark side. They quickly become second class citizens; that is, the wayward citizens. The wayward citizens ultimately choose the easy, immoral path of life instead of the challenging,

moral path of life. They also fail to consider the long-term consequences of both paths. If the wayward citizen sincerely believed life's dark side resulted in sentient death, would they even consider this deadly path?

Be sure to realize that I'm not saying the mass of the financially challenged citizens are wayward citizens. In fact, social statistics show the vast majority of the residents of low income neighborhoods are good, law abiding citizens who are doing their best to cope with the inherent immorality and violence that occurs in their neighborhoods. It's always a small percentage of immoral people who create the large percentage of life's degradations and depravations. And this has always been true throughout mankind's recorded history. But today's poor neighborhoods can't begin to compare to the intense squalid neighborhoods of yesterday's poor. Here's a paradigm that every poor person should know and embrace. **Just because you may be poor does not diminish your internal sentient nature or your intrinsic sentient value. Our Creator's Love provides the seeds of Hope; for our Creator's Hope is the first spiritual substance that leads to true spiritual freedom and enlightenment. How do you give Hope to the hopeless?** Our GBLC loves the poorest person in the world just as much as He loves the richest person in the world. Lastly, be sure to realize the wayward citizen is not limited to any single economic category. You'll find wayward citizens in every economic category, including the financially prosperous and the ultra rich.

My specific interest in addressing the challenges of the poor is to convince the wayward citizens of the low income communities to choose life's loving, enlightened side in lieu of life's fearful, dark side. Criminal statistics show there are far more prison inmates from society's lower income communities than from society's middle and higher income communities. How do you convince any person who's living in life's dark side that the Ideology of Love is the very best ideology by which to live one's life? How do you convince a person who dwells in life's dark side that it's vastly better to be the good citizen who willfully upholds the Five Pillars of Democracy – brotherly love, morality, tolerance, self-discipline, and the will to sacrifice for a higher cause and the greater good? Do they not realize they're sentient human beings and the children of their loving Celestial Father? If they could truly sense their sentient nature and value, then would they embrace their ultimate potential? This potential includes celestial life after terrestrial death. Whenever my mind travels upon this mind path, I always return to the call of Love's Great Mission: "To every person in every nation, let us teach the principles of love."

## **Economic Stratification and the Ethos of Hard Work**

One of the greatest terrestrial forces that affect everyone is economic stratification. There are many levels of economic stratification within the entire

social collective, and these levels obviously range from the very poor to the very rich. And it's very obvious poor citizens have a much greater life-challenge than those citizens whose financial incomes provide a good and prosperous quality of life. There are also many stories of poor citizens who are so desperate they believe they have to steal bread just to feed their starving families. In response, the collective has created social programs to provide help for these extreme social conditions. Such help is provided at the federal, state and local levels. In addition, help is provided by private charitable organizations such as places of worship, the Red Cross, the Salvation Army, the Union Mission, and other similar organizations. In spite of all the help that's provided, too many poor citizens continue to choose the easy, immoral path of life's dark side. While education and hard work are two of the best solutions to freeing oneself from the chains of poverty, the embrace of the principles of love provides the best and most permanent solution to the Freedom of Poverty. This is because the principles of love provide an internal fortification against poverty. Education and hard work only provide an external fortification against poverty. And of course, the combination of both the internal and external fortifications provides the ultimate solution to destroy poverty.

Let us now stop and reflect upon the value of good, hard work. The driving paradigm of the good citizen regarding their daily work is this. The good citizen works hard just to make his or hers daily bread. For the good daily citizen, the greatest amount of time and energy spent in their entire lifetime is dedicated to making one's daily bread. I personally believe this one of the most admirable facets of the human experience. The honest, financial care of one's family and oneself is paramount to art of living. Now some citizens work very hard for very little income while some others citizens hardly work for very much income. The dichotomy of wage earnings baffles the greatest human minds. Nevertheless, the dedication to good, honest and hard work provides a sentient fulfillment that is self-rewarding onto itself. It feels good to do a good day's work for a fair and reasonable wage. And here is the good worker's prevailing attitude about their daily work. Any job that pays reasonably well for the efforts required is a good job. And any job that's a good job is a job that's worth doing, and it's worth doing it well. This is the **economic ethos** of a good and loving person, and it's the economic backbone of a democratic Nation. The word "**ethos**" means: (1) the fundamental character or spirit of a culture; (2) the underlying sentiment that forms the beliefs, customs, or practices of a group or society; and (3) the character or disposition of a community, group or person. It is very well that loving sentient human beings enjoy their work that sustains themselves and their families. However, there are too many wayward citizens who are averse to making their living in a good and honest way. They prefer the easy, immoral path that's a degradation and depravation to their fellow citizens. Thus, they willfully become the Nation's human parasites.

## **Promoting Brotherly Love, Education and Hard Work**

There are many elements that influence the determination of a person's ability to generate monetary income. These elements include **education, technical skills**, social skills, personality, organizational affiliations, family pedigree, one's personal network of family, friends and acquaintances, **the ethos of hard work**, and other similar elements. Note that these elements are often absent from the wayward citizens of society's lower income level. Note also that some of these elements are an inherent function of birth and not a function of internal fortitude. In addition, it's noted social science has recorded that the benefits of education and the ethos of hard work are "generally shunned" by low income communities. I know many poor people believe they don't even have an option to the benefits of education or the ability to obtain an hourly wage rate that would lift them above the threshold of poverty. I believe this reinforces the adage that simple minds can only obtain simple jobs. **While some people may believe these statements have some element of truth, such an attitude stifles the human drive to achieve a higher level of fulfillment, and especially sentient fulfillment.** Furthermore, this type of attitude breeds discontent, which leads to resentment, and finally grows into contempt. And contempt quickly festers into animosity which eventually mutates into belligerent animosity. Thus, the wayward citizen is born.

The response of the wayward citizen to their life-principle of making easy, immoral money is summarized in a single question. Why work so hard for twenty-five cent above minimum wage at some fast food restaurant when you can make that job's yearly income in just one week easily selling drugs, prostitutes, and guns, or gambling, or just robbing people? Sadly to say, that life-principle is quickly embraced by far too many citizens. The life-principle of easy, immoral money may be financially successful in the short-term, but it's profoundly devastating in the long-term. First of all, fear is the constant companion of the criminal parasite. One is always looking over their shoulder to see if some competitor is trying to shoot them. Turf wars between organized crime gangs cause a large percentage of the nation's homicides. Those who make their living in illegal and immoral "businesses" are also in constant fear of being caught in law enforcement's sting operations. But most important, society's criminal parasites know deep within their hearts they have forfeited their ability to fulfill their internal sentient nature that leads to true happiness, satisfaction and fulfillment.

Whatever happened to love? Whatever happened to good-will? And whatever happened to that good child who had so much potential? In spite of all the difficulties and challenges of being poor, all parents need to raise their children in the warmth and protection of true, sincere and genuine love. And this is the equal responsibility of the father as well as the mother. The education of love, good-will, self-worth, self-value and self-esteem must be taught to all our children.

And these are life lessons which the entire village must teach our children. This is especially true of our poor children, for only the power and glory of love shall overcome the many challenges of life in the low income neighborhoods.

The challenges of love abound, but the rewards of love are far greater than the efforts applied. Only love can satisfy and fulfill mankind's sentient nature. Truly, truly, we are sentient human beings driven to search and find TSG Love. A person who dedicates himself or herself to the principles of love shall surely flourish. A marriage that dedicates itself to the principles of love shall surely flourish. A family that dedicates itself to the principles of love shall also flourish. And a Nation that dedicates itself to the principles of love shall abundantly flourish. To the great virtues of love a grateful People give thanks and adoration to their gracious, benevolent and loving Creator, who is the ultimate source of love. And because He first loved us, we too can now love. My friends, are you connected to the Power and Glory of Love? And are you a good citizen, thus truly loving all your neighbors? Or better yet, are you the optimum citizen, thus truly loving your Creator and all your neighbors? To all my friends, let us all **Luv & Liv** to our fullest potential. Be mighty Advocates of Love, and let us bring sentient-love, harmony and prosperity to all of our neighborhoods, especially our low income neighborhoods. **Love can and shall prevail.**

### **3.5 Additional Reflections**

#### **Regarding the Atheist and the Theist**

---

I'm always amazed by how much and how quick atheists talk about God and religion. And they're extremely adamant in having other people agree with their life-ideology. It also seems to me the vast majority of atheists would totally abolish religious institutions and spiritual beliefs if they had such power. But what really concerns me most about atheists is they're **hope bashers**. Atheists have the right, the privilege and the prerogative to believe sentient human life ends at the moment of physical death. If atheists want to live under this dark cloud of despair, then so be it. However, I always choose hope and life over despair and death.

In the advent human life expires at the moment of physical death, then the theistic belief in life after life would truly be folly. And if that is true, then so what? Let the theistic fools have their joyful folly. What does an atheistic loose if theists live life by a hopeful folly? They lose nothing, absolutely nothing! How is an atheistic harmed if theists cling to an erroneous optimistic belief that life's best is yet to come? An atheist isn't harmed just because a theist believes in the living reality of a patient and kind Creator. In the event atheists can rightfully gloat in their adamant belief of oblivion, then theists lose nothing and they're not harmed in any manner. Theists shall actively live life with hope and joy, and with satisfaction

and fulfillment. For I know my hope, my faith and my love allow me to endure, preserve and prevail over all of life's hardships, trials and tribulations. I shall review all the meaningful events of my life, and I shall then smile with a glowing contentment. I've lived a good life, and I know that's true because I lived life with hope and optimism, and with a positive and proactive disposition. I would never be an atheist because its despair would destroy my soul and kill my spirit.

I do believe in the living reality of mankind's Creator simply because it provides hope. And as a collective, America believes in the living reality of a gracious, benevolent and loving Creator simply because this profound belief provides the nation with a living hope and a collective optimistic disposition. Now, tell me truly, what's really bad or wrong about living life with a living hope and an optimistic disposition? I personally would rather live life with an erroneous but very hopeful belief than live life that's founded upon a devastating truth that sucks the joy right out of life. I don't want to live life in a world without love, but I especially don't want to live in a world without hope. What's the meaning, value and purpose of life if it's constantly lived under a dark and foreboding cloud of absolute despair? Again I say, I'll choose hope over despair any day and every day.

Now, in the event the atheists are correct in their belief of the nonexistence of mankind's Creator, then what has the theist really lost? Nothing! Absolutely nothing! The theist will have at least lived his or hers terrestrial life with hope, which surely makes anyone a better person and a better citizen. On the other hand, if the atheists are wrong in their belief of the nonexistence of mankind's Divine Creator, then what have they lost. Everything! Absolutely everything! I gladly hitch my wagon to the star of our gracious and benevolent Creator. And I'll follow that star until someone proves to me there's a better star to follow. **Truly and seriously, where shall your mind dwell at the final flicker of your life's ember?**

### **Mankind's Hope in His Creator**

I'd rather be a sparrow than a snail.  
And I'd rather be a hammer than a nail.

I'd rather be a tree than a log.  
And I'd rather be an angel than a dog.

I'd rather know the truth than be misled.  
And I'd rather be alive than dead.

### **3.6 Why Do Terrestrial Beings Have to Die?**

Why do terrestrial beings have to die? I surely don't know why, and I doubt if there's anyone who truly knows why. Death is inevitable, and it's the intentional will of our Supreme Creator for His terrestrial children to experience terrestrial death. Perhaps there are great life-lessons to be learned from terrestrial death, but what in heaven could they be? But if you're not a sentient-lover, then would it be more correct to say "what in hell are they?" And isn't terrestrial death also celestial birth. So then, are we dying, or are we being born? I like thoughts of birth much, much better than thoughts of death. Is there a Mighty Angel of Birth as well as the Mighty Angel of Death? And who would you rather be your friend and neighbor – the Angel of Birth or the Angel of Death?

Nevertheless, we're born to die, and so we shall die. And maybe it all has to do with cosmic order and cosmic development. There are clear, distinctive ages and stages of terrestrial development, and in a similar manner there may be clear, distinctive ages and stages of celestial development. Maybe our Creator is only looking for a few good sentient human beings to work with Him. If that's true, then are you good enough to serve side-by-side with the Mighty Sovereign of the Cosmos? As another alternative, perhaps we're all celestial cadets preparing ourselves to be star trekers of our Creator's far-flung Cosmos. Beam me up Scotty just as soon as you can! Did you ever think of death as a transporter? This is definitely the scenario I like best.

I personally have a deep-seated sensation that the terrestrial world is cosmic kindergarten, and we must successfully complete this rudimentary stage in order to proceed with the next stage, which is cosmic first grade. How many cosmic grades are there, and are you planning on going to cosmic college? What cosmic university do you want to go to? And you also have to wonder if the cosmic school authorities require a poor and wayward student to repeat his current grade level. Do you think it's possible that a sentient human being would actively desire to repeat cosmic kindergarten? Holly macaroni! There are so many questions, and I haven't heard one good answer yet.

My good friends, wouldn't it be nice if life and death could be as easy as kindergarten? Wouldn't it be nice if all mankind really knew the living reality of our loving Creator? Wouldn't it be nice if all mankind truly loved one another? And wouldn't it be nice to know with absolute certainty that the Kingdom of Love really does exist. I believe there's a Rainbow Connection between heaven and earth, and between the Celestial Father and His terrestrial children. Don't ever forget that love is like a rainbow. Would you like to see your Creator stroll down to earth upon this Rainbow Connection and then call out your name and say: "This is my loving and obedient terrestrial child Enoch Smith with whom I am very pleased.

Enoch, come home with me now and I'll show you the beauty and mysteries of my Kingdom of Love.” Would you like to walk with your Creator on the Rainbow Connection back to His Holy Mansion of Love? This great mansion is somewhere just over the rainbow. This is actually a Love-Dream of life without death, and it's especially made for the lovers, the dreamers and me. To all my friends I say, let us all **Luv & Liv** to fulfill our wildest dreams and to prepare ourselves for the Kingdom of Love.

## Part 4

# The Innate Scientific And Intellectual Challenges Of The Christian Church

## 4.1 The Spiritual Disposition of the American People

The Christian Church and the social sciences have been gathering statistics about religion in America for over 80 years. I found three websites in a quick search of the internet, and there are many more sites available. Here are the three websites I found, which I'm sharing in the event the reader has a deeper interest in this subject.

[http://www.gallup.com/poll/103459/  
Question-Answers-About-Americans-Religious.aspx#2](http://www.gallup.com/poll/103459/Question-Answers-About-Americans-Religious.aspx#2)

<http://thinkchristian.net/new-poll-is-american-church-in-decline>

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Church\\_attendance](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Church_attendance)

While some of the statistical elements have trends that vary with America's social conditions (economy, war, the collective's emotional state, and so forth) one very important element has remained consistent. Most Americans identify themselves as having a spiritual disposition, thus being defined as "People of Faith." Naturally in America, the vast majority of Americans identify themselves with a Christian religious affiliation. I once read there are over 200 Christian denominations in America. America is a vastly predominate Christian nation. This of course is a natural social condition derived from the fact that America was mostly settled by Western European nations who were profoundly Christian. The WASP factor (white, Anglo-Saxon, Protestant) still has a significant effect upon the American culture, but the WASP factor is slowly diminishing in America. The 2012 presidential election (Barack Obama versus Mitt Romney) is a confirmation of this fact. The American "melting pot" is revising the American racial and nationality profile. Nevertheless, the constantly transitioning American profile remains to be vastly associated with a Christian religious affiliation.

The Christian Church today faces a well established fact that the Church is losing its social influence within America. This information is well documented by the various protestant denominations, the Catholic Church, and the associated social sciences. On the other hand, the American People's spirituality has remained to be a constant factor. Many American's have been influenced by Eastern religions,

especially Buddhism and other “love based” religions. There’s a spiritual independence among Americans that has affected the Christian Church. Consequently, church membership is on the decline, and church attendance is also on the decline. This has become a significant concern for both the Protestant Church and the Catholic Church. And yet, they have not been able to reverse this declining trend. The Church seems to be out of touch with the spiritual needs of the American People.

As result of the forces that are now affecting church membership and attendance, a polarizing influence has occurred. More women attend church than men. More members of the older generation attend church than the younger generation. More married people attend church than divorced people or people who have never been married. If you regularly attend church then the more likely you are to have a conservative political affiliation. People who regularly attend church are more likely to reflect upon philosophical and ethical issues. People who are high school graduates are more likely to attend church than people who dropped out of high school, and people who regularly attend church are more likely to have a college degree. One study even indicated that people who regularly attend church have a lower chance of acquiring Alzheimer’s Disease. And finally, multiple studies have found that people who regularly attend church are much happier than people who don’t regularly attend church.

**Now, here are the points to remember.** In reflection of these most interesting Church trends, I believe it’s very clear that Christian Church is losing its influence in American society. I’ve also read this effect is even greater in Europe than in America. It seems to me America’s Christian Church is failing the American people. Why is this? And why is this happening especially in view of the fact that about 90 percent of all Americans are defined to have a spiritual disposition? Furthermore, why is this happening when the data clearly indicates that church association is highly beneficial to the individual, to marriages, to raising children, to attaining good health, and to attaining happiness? Let’s stop and think, and let’s reflect and ponder upon this great and perplexing dilemma. This is especially important from the perspective of our democratic social system. The truth is, the Church needs America, and America needs the Church.

## **4.2 The Christian Church’s Insensibility And Intractability In a Modern Scientific World**

---

It’s a sad and disappointing fact that the Christian Church’s history has been written in blood, death and destruction. The Christian Wars, Protestants killing Catholics and Catholics killing Protestants, were incredibly vicious and bloody. Why are Holy Wars the most corrupt and malevolent wars? Just the word

“inquisition” caused gale winds to blow fear and anxiety throughout the Roman Catholic Empire. Furthermore, the Church actively pursued the social control of the People through the monopoly of interpersonal beliefs:

**Believe as we tell you to believe or we shall make your life a living hell. And we reserve the right to burn you at the stake if you don't believe as we instruct you.**

Intense words of fear are sufficient to control the masses, thereby securing the absolute control of the People. This absolute control included the control of secular and scientific beliefs as well as religious beliefs. The Church didn't allow any competition which promoted oppositional belief systems. In time, two great social-political systems arose to finally put an end to the Church's intolerance of opposing beliefs systems. The first system was Democracy which mandated the tolerance of all religions. The Freedom of Religion leads to the Freedom of Belief which then leads to the Freedom of the Mind, and which in turn leads to peaceful coexistence among all man-made religions. The second social-political system was communism which formally terminated all religious affiliations. Communism was also intolerant of opposing social and political belief systems. Never forget how happy and ecstatic Eastern Europeans were on the day Russian communism was replaced with Democracy. It's self-evident that Democracy is a far superior system in comparison to communism. To believe as one chooses and to live one's life in accordance with one's belief systems are very, very precious elements of Democracy.

Today's Christian Church is an immense composite of various belief systems that are often in conflict and in competition with one another. First of all, there are three main divisions of the Christian Churches: (1) the Roman Catholic Church, (2) the Eastern Orthodox Church, and (3) the Protestant Reformation Church. Each of these churches also have subcomponents of believers which are designated as: (1) ultra liberal believers, (2) liberal believers, (3) moderate believers, (4) conservative believers, and (5) ultra conservative believers. Such variations naturally create opposing beliefs elements. Also, each individual component of the Christian Church activity seek new members who must agree with the specific beliefs of that Church component. As a natural consequence of our human nature, each component and subcomponent is quick to defend, support and promote their specific belief systems. It amazes me how the Christian Church can even survive in face of the active competition and the strong wills of the various believers. This is especially true of the ultra conservative believers who are the most vocal in their opposition to certain scientific discoveries and endeavors. Unfortunately, insensible religious dogmas too often control the mind of ultra conservative religionists. Here's the mindset of the **traditional Christian**:

## **I believe what I believe because the Bible tells me so, and that's good enough for me!**

On the other hand, the scientific mind is dedicated to the pursuit of truth. In fact, science is the pursuit of truth. This pursuit of truth is based upon critical analyses that are sensible, rational and logical. Furthermore, science continues to check and challenge its conclusions, thus taking its best and making it better. Such a mind readily discerns the objective truths of life while perceiving the objective errors of ancient-ancient religious beliefs. If the ancient Church still had its way, then the earth would still be flat and the center of the universe, and the sun and all the planets would still revolve around the earth. Also, there wouldn't be a Protestant Reformation Church.

Today's world is nothing like the world of the first Christians. Today's world is also nothing like the world of the Renaissance period or the Age of Enlightenment period. The world has evolved intellectually, scientifically, emotionally, socially, politically and spiritually. Even the Christian Church has evolved to some degree. Sometimes the Church did listen to the will of the People, and as a result they changed some of their rigid belief elements. As an example, Christianity's First Reformation is a very important element in the spiritual evolution of mankind. However, the Christian Church has not evolved in stride with the world's secular elements. This especially includes the many fields of physical science and social science. To the scientific mind, the Church is behind times and needs to adjust to the great truths that have been discovered and applied for the betterment of mankind. To the scientific mind, too many traditional Christians still embrace and promote the superstitious minds of their ancient-ancient forefathers. Furthermore, too many Christians tenaciously adhere to beliefs that are beyond rationality and sensibility. They unwisely disregard the People's norms of common sense. **They believe what they believe because that's what they want to believe. And if you're honest with yourself, then you realize you believe what you believe because that's what you want the truth to be.** Everyone adheres to highly biased beliefs, and many people do this to a very extreme degree. This too is part of our human nature. What is the difference between capricious opinions versus deep-seated paradigms? All too often there is no difference.

Why do you believe what you believe, and how do you reduce and control the foolish biases of your personal belief systems? First, I want to reconsider the first two Paradigms of Life. Second, I want to introduce the reader to the Pentaquery Belief Principle. And third, I want the reader to carefully reconsider the Truth-Seeker's Methodology. I repeat earlier statements for the reader's benefit.

## **The Pentaquery Belief Principle**

1. What do you believe?
2. Why do you believe it?
3. To what degree can you prove it's true?
4. Are you prepared to revise your beliefs?
5. What do you believe that's worth dying for?

## **The First Paradigm of Life**

### **Collectively speaking**

We know very little while we believe very much.

### **Individually speaking**

I know very little while I believe very much.

## **The Second Paradigm of Life**

Honest people have honest doubts that create honest questions, and honest questions entail honest uncertainties and honest unbelief.

## **The Truth-Seeker's Methodology**

1. Ensure your beliefs are as objective as possible.
2. Ensure your beliefs are reasonable, sensible, rational and logical.
3. Ensure your beliefs are compatible and consistent.
4. Ensure your beliefs are sincere and genuine.
5. Ensure your beliefs enhance life and not impair life.

It's very important that all Americans try to understand the opposing beliefs and perspectives of other citizens. This is an act of loving tolerance, and tolerance is one of the Five Pillars of Democracy. It's our democratic duty and responsibility to be tolerant of other people's belief systems. But don't forget this tolerance is predicated upon the condition that a person's belief system doesn't manifest itself so that it becomes a fanatical detriment, degradation or depravation to other people or to oneself. Nevertheless, we like to believe our belief systems are the best and the truest. And while our belief systems are sometimes the best and truest, this condition isn't always true. Everyone harbors some belief elements that are not really true. We're all imperfect human beings living in an imperfect world. In fact, we may even adamantly believe something to be true even though we know it doesn't make common sense. In essence, we lie to ourselves in order to adhere to a higher order of our personal belief systems. Fortunately, history has proven that common sense prevails in the long-term.

**Now, here are the points to remember.** It's very important for the total composite of the Christian Church to consider the proposition of Christianity's Second Reformation. This Reformation has been quietly occurring for decades. I say this based upon my personal observations of American religion, the social and religious changes that have been quietly occurring since the 1960s, and personal conversations with family, friends and strangers. I realize most Americans don't agree with me and probably many more Americans don't even care if a Second

Reformation is actually occurring. Nonetheless, Christianity's Second Reformation is a very important event in the history of mankind. If there really is a second Reformation in progress, then it shall eventually be revealed by significant and radical changes in the Christian Church. As with Christianity's First Reformation, many old beliefs, doctrines and dogmas are going to fade away for a significant proportion of the Church. In the end, the Church shall be a better, freer, more truthful and more loving institution. In addition, it shall all occur without any violence which was associated with the Church's First Reformation. This is because Christians are a far more loving and tolerant People than their Christian predecessors. All Christians must always remember this great truth: "Love is patient. Love is kind." Patience is the father; kindness is the mother; and tolerance is their child. May the reader's heart and mind be open to the truths of this great Reformation. Please wisely consider the thoughts and reflections of this scientific Christian.

### **4.3 Intellectual Challenges Regarding the Christian Bible**

Christianity has always justified itself by the authority of the Christian Bible – this including the Old Testament and the New Testament. The Old Testament is what some Christians call "the Jewish Bible" or "the Hebrew Bible." However, Judaism doesn't recognize either one of these terminologies. Jews call their religious scriptures "the Written Torah" or "the Tanakh" (also spelled "Tanach"). This Jewish scripture represents the entire body of the Judaic laws and teachings. Judaism also uses the phrase "the Torah." This terminology represents "the Five Books of Moses," which are the first five books of the Old Testament (Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy). In addition, Judaism has a manuscript called "the Talmud." There are actually two Talmuds – the Jerusalem Talmud and the Babylonian Talmud. In accordance with Jewish custom and practice, the phrase "the Talmud" means "the Babylonian Talmud." The Talmud is a "commentary document" written through the centuries by renown Jewish theologians. These learned men explain what a specific scripture means, how to interpret it, and how to apply it. Accordingly, the Talmud is a very important Jewish document. The important point to understand is that the history of the whole Christian Bible is very complex and is greatly affected by the inclusion of the Old Testament. The Old Testament section of the Christian Bible makes the Bible a very, very old document. From this point on, I'm going to call "the Christian Bible" simply "the Bible."

The Bible has about 40 contributing authors who began writing the Bible around 1500 BC. The final writing of the Bible (that is, the completion of the New Testament) occurred around 100 AD. Note that the New Testament was completed about two generations after Jesus' earthly death. However, the final canonization of the Bible (determining and finalizing which books were written by God versus

which books were written by man) didn't occur until around 400 AD, and this date is highly debated. It's a deep-seated Christian belief that mankind did not write the Bible. These human writers were only collaborators in the writing of the Bible by the Holy Spirit. Therefore, the Bible does not represent the imperfect wisdom of human beings, but instead represents the perfect wisdom of the Holy Creator. Based upon this belief system, many Christians adamantly believe the Bible is "holy," (consequently called "the Holy Bible"), and therefore is infallible. This is especially true of the ultra conservative Christians. Naturally, not all Christians agree with this belief tenant. Here are some other important points regarding the writing of the Bible.

1. Language of the Old Testament: The vast majority of the Old Testament was written in Hebrew, but about ten chapters were written in Aramaic. Aramaic was the everyday language used in Syria, Mesopotamia, Palestine and adjacent areas. Aramaic is related to Hebrew and Arabic.
2. Translation of the Old Testament: About 300 BC the Jewish Bible was translated into Greek. This Greek version of the Old Testament is called the Septuagint. This translation was accomplished to help Jews who lived throughout the Greek Empire. These Jews were being assimilated into the Greek culture, and therefore, they spoke better Greek than Hebrew. In time, the Septuagint became an important reference source when the Old Testament was translated into European languages.
3. Translation of the New Testament: In regards to the New Testament, it was translated into Latin about 400 AD. This translation is known as the Vulgate Bible. It too became very important when the New Testament was translated into European languages.
4. Canonizing the Bible: The history of canonizing each book of the Bible is an epic story that's still debated today. As an example, many Biblical scholars – especially including Martin Luther (1483 AD to 1546 AD) adamantly disagreed with the canonization of several New Testament books. Martin Luther is identified by some scholar as the Father of The Protestant Reformation. As a part of his drive to reform the Roman Catholic Church, Luther wanted to delete from the New Testament the books of Hebrews, James, Jude and Revelations.
5. English Versions of the Bible: There are many English versions of the Bible. Prior to the late 1800s there were the Tyndale's Bible, Coverdale's Bible, Geneva Bible, Bishops' Bible, and the King James Bible. From the late 1800s there were the English Revised Bible, American Standard Bible, Revised Standard Bible, Moffatt Bible, Smith-Goodspeed Bible, Knox Bible, Berkeley Bible, Jerusalem Bible, New English Bible, New American Bible, New American Standard Bible, The Living Bible, Good News Bible, and the New

International Bible. I'm sure I must have overlooked some other English Bible versions. I also wonder how many Bible versions other nations have – especially Western European nations where Christianity took root and spread throughout the world? I should also note that the Bible varies somewhat between Christian nations. This especially includes the final arrangement of the books of the Bible.

6. The Hidden Books of the Bible: The period between the Old Testament and the New Testament is called the Babylonian Captivity. The nation of Israel was conquered by the Babylonian empire, and the vast majority of the Israelites were captured and brought back to Babylon. These captured Jews recorded the historical events that occurred during this captivity. There were about fourteen books written during this period. This collection of books is called “the Apocrypha.” Apocrypha is an ancient Greek word which means “hidden,” thus meaning “the Hidden Books of the Bible.” When Martin Luther translated the Bible into the German language, he included the Apocrypha. He located the books between the Old Testament and the New Testament. The original version of the King James English Bible also included the Apocrypha. The Roman Catholic Church included most of these in their Latin Bible and even canonized them. Most of the Protestant Churches directly rejected the Apocrypha and would not canonize any of these books. The Apocrypha remains very controversial to this day.

**Now, here are the points to remember.** The history of the writing of the Bible is: (1) very complicated, (2) involves a very long period of time (over 1,600 years), (3) is filled with theological politics, preferences and controversies, and (4) is the source of bitter, heated disagreements. These disagreements are then compounded by discerning which Biblical stories are literally true and which stories are allegorical; that is, stories that represent a spiritual meaning through material forms. The story of Job is probably like a lightning rod when it comes to determining if the story is true or if it's an allegory. By the personal reflections of my mind, I can only believe the Christian Bible is saturated with uncertainties and religious posturing. To say the Bible contains some exaggerations would be a cosmic understatement. And I should also note that my very brief presentation is only the tip of this theological iceberg.

From a sincere, honest, sensible, rational and objective mind, how could the Bible not have some mistakes and oversights? How could some important elements not have been lost in the many translations that have occurred throughout history? Why are there so many English versions of the Bible, and how much do these versions conflict with each other? Can they all be “Holy?” I can begin to understand why the support of the Christian Church has dropped through the past few decades. We as a People start teaching our children to have scientific minds from the very beginning of elementary school. It's only reasonable that they

challenge the insensible, irrational and subjective teachings, doctrines and dogma of the Church. The truth is, we are a far more intelligent People than our forefathers, our ancient forefathers, and especially our ancient-ancient forefathers. If the Church doesn't grow, adjust and evolve to serve modern mankind, then the spiritual and loving power of the Church shall diminish to where it's social impact is Cosmically indiscernible. God help us all if we as a People allow that to happen.

## **The Old Testament's Mythology**

Biblical scholars estimate the first writings of the Old Testament began about 1,500 BC. Try to imagine the fearful, superstitious minds of these ancient-ancient forefathers. These forefathers began recording the events of their tribal life. The recordings of the tribal's history has now begun. But these historical recordings are then expanded with some innocence embellishments. These recordings eventually become legendary tales. As more time passes, the legendary stories are further embellished. What was once legend evolves into mythical tales. One of these tales adds the feature that the stories are now the product of the Supreme Being whom the tribe fears and worships. These stories are eventually defined to be the holy word of the tribes Supreme Being. Now being the work of their God makes the stories infallible.

### **The Evolution of the Infallible Truth**

**What was history grows into legend.**

**What was legend mutates into myth.**

**What was myth passes into holiness.**

**What is holy becomes the infallible truth.**

There's Greek mythology, Roman mythology, Norse mythology, Hindu mythology, Chinese mythology, and many, many more cultural mythologies. Our ancient-ancient forefathers were filled with wondrous stories of their imaginations, and most of those imaginations were derived from their intense fears and superstitions. Why isn't the Hebrew Bible (the Christian's Old Testament) not

called Hebrew mythology? There are many stories in the Old Testaments that I personally believe are mythological. This includes, but is not limited to the following Old Testament stories.

1. The Creation of the Universe: The creation of the universe is a great mystery, and no one knows how it was created. Its immensity is so great that mankind's mind doesn't have the capacity to really understand the universe. We don't even know what position our Creator has within the universe. Maybe our Creator uses the science of evolution as the means to do His creation? And if you really did know the originals of the universe would it make you a better person, or a better Christian, or a better lover of God and mankind? Any and all belief systems regarding the creation of the universe is meaningless. But hopefully we'll learn this truth in the world-to-come.
2. Mankind's Creation and His Original State as Being Perfect: The sciences of evolution and genetic decoding are very well documented and established sciences. However, I do believe some evolutionists make too many assumptions and then present them as scientific facts. I also believe the concepts of micro-evolution are far more reasonable than the concepts of macro-evolution. But this much we do know. The sciences of evolution and genetics are far from perfect, but they still provide the best understanding of life. Needless to say, the design and creation of corporeal life is extremely fascinating. Are there highly intelligent beings actively involved in the design and creation of animal and plant life? But why did our ancient-ancient forefathers ever believe mankind was created perfect? Do the dreams and hopes of mankind regaining his lost paradise ease the burdens of imperfection? Is human sacrifice better than animal sacrifice, and is animal sacrifice better than plant sacrifice? If the nation of Israel ever rebuilds their temple will they return to the practice of animal sacrifice? If God is love – especially perfect love – and we're His Children of Humanity whom He deeply loves, then why do we need to practice sacrificial rituals to obtain His forgiveness and companionship? If we love and emulate our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator – thereby becoming collaborators with Him in His Kingdom of Love – then isn't that sufficient to be reconciled with the Lord of Life? I believe it's totally irrational to believe mankind was ever perfect or will someday be perfect. Our Creator's call has always been the same throughout the ages: "Be still and know that I am, and love one another as I love you."
3. The Creation of Eve: Here's the Biblical story of the creation of Eve. Remember Adam was created first and just by himself. Adam was created by this method: "The the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being." Eve was later created because Adam needed a helper. Eve was created by this method: "So the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon the man, and he

slept; then He took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh at that place. And the Lord God fashioned into a woman the rib which He had taken from the man, and brought her to the man. And the man said, “this is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh. She shall be called Woman because she was taken out of Man.” This emphatically sounds far more like mythology than reality. And yet, there are tens of thousands of Christians who adamantly believe this story is the irrefutable truth of how the woman gender was created. Does this story sound reasonable, rational and logical to you?

4. Noah’s Ark and the Worldwide Flood: How big would a structure have to be to properly house a male and female of every animal type and every “creeping thing,” and also all the food that’s necessary to feed all that’s on board Noah’s ark? According to the Biblical story, God caused a worldwide flood that covered all mountains, and the water prevailed upon the earth for one hundred and fifty days. This flood killed everything on earth except for the life that was on Noah’s ark. The Bible also states Noah lived to be 950 years old. Does this story sound reasonable, rational and logical to you? Nonetheless, a lot of people get excited whenever there’s a story about someone finding Noah’s ark.
5. The Tower of Babel: The Tower of Babel is a story about Noah’s descendants. Supposedly, there was only one language spoken on earth, and this condition allowed mankind to rapidly develop their civilization. Accordingly, they built a city with a huge tower that was so high that it would reach into heaven. When God learned what Noah’s descendents were doing, he responded by creating multiple languages. The people then scattered all over the earth in accordance with their specific new language. How high would that tower have to be in order to reach into heaven? Of course, today with satellites and space telescopes we know without any doubt that this story is no more than a fable.
6. The Parting of the Red Sea: The Biblical story of the parting of the Red Sea is one of the best known stories of the Old Testament. Moses and the Jewish people were fleeing from the pharaoh’s army. Very unwisely, they ran directly to the Red Sea and became totally trapped. God comes to their rescue by parting the Red Sea, whereby the Jews simply walled across the wet and soggy bottom of the sea. I always wondered what the sea bottom was like and how many fish were flopping all around. Wouldn’t it be easier to build a bridge across the Red Sea? But even better, wouldn’t the easiest method been the Star Trek method: “Scottie, beam me over to the other side of the Red Sea.” Does this story sound reasonable, rational and logical to you?
7. God Stops the Sun and Moon: One of the lesser known stories of the Old Testament is the story where God stops the sun and moon from moving. Joshua was a warrior, an aid to Moses, and became the leader of the Israelites. They were now in the Promise Land and were having military victories to gain the

Promise Land. Joshua made peace with the city of Gibeon, and they became allies. One day Gibeon was attacked by five kings of the Amorites. Joshua received word of the attack and responded to help save Gibeon. The battle went well for the Israelites, but they were running out of the day light that was necessary to complete the battle. Basically, Joshua wanted to kill more of the Amorites so he wouldn't have to fight them later. Joshua had the upper hand and wanted to complete the killing. Joshua prayed to God to stop the sun and moon so that he would have sun light as long as he needed it. God obliged Joshua and He stopped the sun and moon "for about a whole day." This Bible story was later used to help convict Galileo of the heresy of believing the earth revolves around the sun in lieu of the sun revolving around the earth. How could a person really believe the sun could be stopped, especially for a whole day? Yet, people adamantly believe this to be an absolute fact because they first believe the Bible is infallible.

8. Jonah Swallowed by a Great Fish: Most people know the story of Jonah and the whale, but the Bible never uses the word "whale." The Bible uses the phrase "a great fish." According to the Bible, Jonah was in the belly of this great fish for three days and nights. This story sounds exactly like a Greek mythological story. I believe this is a great children's story, but it has no basis of reality.

I firmly believe in faith and all of its spiritual powers and blessings. But I call my faith "IS Faith" – "Intelligent, Sensible Faith." On the other hand, to believe all the stories in the Bible are unequivocally and irrefutably true (therefore the entire Bible is literally infallible) is intellectual suicide. I call such faith "RIB Faith" – "Rudimentary, Insensible, Blind Faith." I hope common sense rules the day and love reconciles all who are in honest and sincere disagreement. Once again, let us all agree to be tolerant of the other person's personal beliefs. Meanwhile, let's remember these wise teachings of the apostle Paul (First Corinthians 13: 11 – 13).

*When I was a child, I used to speak as a child, think as a child, reason as a child. When I became a man I did away with childish things. For now we see as in a dim mirror, but in the world-to-come we shall see as face-to-face with the All-Knowing. Now I know in part, but then I shall know fully just as I am fully known. And now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.*

**Now, here are the points to remember.** I believe love and tolerance is what IS Faith is all about. Surely, love surpasses faith, and love was Jesus' favorite topic that He taught. Accordingly, if the Church is to fulfill the spiritual needs of

the People, then it must focus upon the fundamental principles of love and how to apply love in daily life. There's no interpersonal sensations of happiness without love, and there's no freedom of fear and anxiety without our Creator's perfect love. Let this be the central message of the Christian Church for the next millennium.

Lastly, the focus of this discussion has concerned the “**literal infallibility**” of the Bible, especially the Old Testament Bible. I should note that the New Testament also contains inconsistencies that Bible scholars identify and debate. However, these New Testament inconsistencies pale to the gullible, bold stories of the Old Testament. A sensible, reasonable and rational mind cannot help but challenge the literal meaning of these stories. In other words, some of the stories in the Bible are literally fallible. But is the Bible “spiritually infallible?” In my personal response to this most important question, I deeply believe in the “**spiritual infallibility**” of the Christian Bible. If you truly, sincerely and genuinely pursue the truth, then you shall find many amazing truths that shall lead you to spiritual enlightenment. And I'm sure the believers of every man-made religion profess the same response in respect to the spiritual infallibility of their book of scripture. Furthermore, I believe they're correct in their profession. For this I deeply believe. There are many paths to mankind's Creator, and every religionist believes his religion provides the best and fastest path to our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator. Our Creator's perfect love quickly reconciles all the imperfections of all sentient human beings who truly, sincerely and genuinely love their Creator.

#### **4.4 Christianity's First Reformation**

---

It's very important to know that the Christian Church has changed, grown and evolved throughout its existence. The Church takes its best and makes it better. Often the Church's improvement is the result of the People's strong opposition to unfair, unjust and unreasonable actions of the Church. Consequently, the Church should change as theological and social forces mold a new and improved spiritual institution, or even perhaps, new and improved spiritual institutions. The Church's willingness to change itself is also why there are three major Christian divisions (Roman Catholic, Eastern Orthodox and Protestant). This is proof the Church evolves in accordance with the spiritual needs of a selective culture. And of course, the corrupt practices of the Roman Catholic Church also served as a catalyst for the Protestant Reformation. The differences of belief in Christian doctrines and dogmas were not only significant theological differences, they were also very powerful forces that lead to extreme social changes. Too often these changes were attained by extreme violence. This is especially true of the Church's First Reformation; that is, the Protestant Reformation. It's also very important to know what changes occurred in the newly created Protestant Church. This discussion naturally begins with a review of the German monk who initiated the Protestant Reformation, that person being Martin Luther.

Martin Luther was born November 10, 1483 and died February 18, 1546 (62 years old). Luther was very well educated, ultimately obtaining a Doctorate in Theology. Accordingly, he was given the title of "Doctor in Bible." He also was both a monk and a priest, a university professor, a very prolific theological writer, and he also wrote about forty hymns. He was the first man to translate the Church's Latin Bible into the People's vernacular language, which in this case was German. (The King James Bible was translated about 90 years later.) Luther also incorporated drastic and extreme Church reforms which affected the People's worship service, the priesthood and major theological doctrines. Luther eventually married a nun who bore him six children. Some of Luther's Church reforms include the following items.

1. The Roman Catholic Church's worship services were only in Latin. The vast majority of the People didn't speak Latin, and therefore, they were detached from understanding the services. Luther initiated worship services in the People's vernacular language. The Protestant Church followed Luther's lead.
2. Luther added congregational singing in his worship services. Once again, the Protestant Church followed Luther's lead.
3. Luther eventually eliminated compulsory confession and replaced it with private confession. The Protestant Church also incorporated this revision.
4. Luther also attacked the practice of clerical vows, especially including the vow of celibacy and the prohibition of clerical marriage. He based this change upon the argument that breaking vows was not sinful because vows were a vain attempt to win Christian salvation. This of course led to the return of clerical marriages for the Protestant clergy. It's noted the original Church didn't prohibit clerical marriages until hundreds of years after its beginning. After all, the Bible specifically states the apostle Peter (who also was the first Pope) was married, so why shouldn't Popes and priests be married?

## **The Church Doctrine That Initiated the Reformation**

The heart of the Reformation focused upon the Roman Catholic Church's doctrine and practice of selling indulgences. Secularly, the word "**indulgence**" means: (1) the act or practice of indulging, and (2) the gratification of desire. In the Roman Catholic Church, "**indulgence**" means "partial readmission of the temporal punishment, especially purgatorial atonement which is still due for sin after absolution." You may have to be a Catholic to understand their doctrine of indulgence. The focus of this belief falls upon the conception of purgatory. Purgatory is designed for Christians who were too bad for heaven but too good for

hell. The Church's doctrine never defined purgatory as a place, but instead is a condition of existence associated with the process of purification. Likewise, heaven and hell are not places but are conditions of existence. Nevertheless, most people associate heaven, hell and purgatory as places. The Catholic Church's position regarding purgatory is defined as follows.

1. What is purgatory? Purgatory is the state of those who die in God's friendship, assured of their eternal salvation, but who still have need of purification to enter into the happiness of heaven.
2. How can we help the souls being purified in purgatory? Because of the communion of saints, the faithful who are still pilgrims on earth are able to help the souls in purgatory by offering prayers in suffrage for them, especially the Eucharistic sacrifice (the sacrament of holy communion). They also help them by almsgiving, indulgences, and works of penance (that is, acts of good deeds).

This in affect is the practice of: (1) praying for the dead, (2) providing penance for the dead, and (3) doing acts of good deeds for the dead. By doing these practices the believer directly participates in the final purification of the person they dearly love and has died. Many religions believe in praying for the dead. Nevertheless, the Protestant Church did not and does not believe in purgatory, indulgences and other related issues. Luther believed and taught that salvation is received only as a free gift of God's grace and through faith in Jesus as redeemer from sin. This is called the Doctrine of Justification By Faith. In other words, a person cannot earn salvation by doing good deeds or by donating money to the Church or other worthy causes. It's also noted from the Protestant's perspective, Jesus already did all the sacrificing that's needed for a believer to be saved. And of course, that's why He is also called the Lamb of God. Protestants are also quick to add that giving donations and doing acts of good deeds are a natural consequence of the believer's internalized faith in Jesus and thus accepting His ultimate sacrifice. True, sincere and genuine love is a gift of the Spirit and leads the believer to produce the good fruits of his or hers loving essence.

Eventually, Luther wrote his famous Ninety-Five Theses which focused upon the Church's sales of indulgences. (It's widely believed he nailed the Theses upon the doors of the local church, but many scholars believe this never happened.) At this time the Church was actively raising money (mostly from the poor) to rebuild St. Peter's Basilica in Rome. Luther adamantly disputed the Church's claim that freedom from God's punishment for sin could be attained by the purchase of indulgences. Within a couple of years Luther was excommunicated from the Church, declared to be an outlaw of the Church and the Roman Catholic Empire, his writings were banned, his arrest mandated, and it was even permitted for anyone to kill Luther if encountered. The Church also made it a crime for anyone to give Luther food or shelter. Most fortunate for Luther, he had German friends and

benefactors in high places, especially including Prince Frederick III, the Elector of Saxony. Twenty-five years later – after a long, prosperous and prolific life – Luther died from multiple health conditions. The house where he died is in Eisleben, Germany, and the house still exist today. Luther was buried in the Castle Church in Wittenberg, Germany. The father of the protestant reformation remains to be one of the most influential persons in the course of human history, and his tomb site and the house he died in receives tens of thousands of visitors each year.

The history of the Reformation is a very complex matter and covers about 200 years of Western European history. Significant attempts to reform the Roman Catholic Church actually began about 100 years before Luther's Reformation. These original protests have been called the Old Reformation. Two of the most active reformers were John Wycliffe of England and Jan Hus from Poland. Ultimately, both men were determined by the Church to be heretics. Jan Hus was burned at the stake, and John Wycliffe was burned posthumously as a heretic. However, this failed Old Reformation led to the establishment of two Protestant Churches, one called the Moravian Brethren Protestants and the other one called the Unitas Fratrum Protestants. The fundamental principles of the Old Reformation also served as the primary principles for the protests and opposition of the New Reformation. In the long-term, the Old Reformation was a success.

Meanwhile, the issues and concerns of the Old Reformation were never resolved by the Church. They continued to fester within the hearts and minds of the People, many of the clergy, and some of the powerful magistrates. These magistrates were the ruling authorities where one of the more famous authorities was named Prince Frederick III. If a Reformation movement was supported by a magistrate, then the movement was called a Magisterial Reformation. Luther's movement was a Magisterial Reformation. If the movement lacked political support, then the movement was called a Radical Reformation. The Radical Reformation movements met much greater opposition from the Roman Catholic Church. In a relatively short period of time Martin Luther's challenges began to take effect. Luther was also greatly aided for the first time in history by the power of the printing press. Furthermore, Luther's work was not an isolated movement.

The Protestant movement was actually a cluster of Reformation movements, where most of these movements became a separate Protestant denomination. Some of the more famous Reformation leaders were Huldrych Zwingli (from Switzerland), John Calvin (who led the French Huguenots while exiled in Switzerland), John Knox (from Scotland), and other lesser known reform leaders. Even England's King Henry VIII and Queen Elizabeth were significant personalities of the Reformation. Religious civil wars irrupted throughout Europe, resulting in the death of hundreds of thousands of Christians killed by other Christians. Disagreements and disputes between Reformation organizations were also common and were often based upon geopolitical boundaries. Opposition to

theological differences between Protestant groups were sometimes as heatedly debated as the theological differences between the collective Reformation and the Roman Catholic Church. Many of these differences still remain today.

**Now, here are the points to remember.** The religious beliefs and practices of the Christian Church has continuously evolved and changed in association with other political, social and spiritual forces. Sometimes the changes were so radical that new divisions of the composite Church were formed. These changes involved extremely radical theological doctrines, beliefs and dogmas. Some critical elements of the Bible were reexamined and reinterpreted, thus providing new radical meanings to what was once highly established Biblical doctrines. Were these changes helpful or detrimental? The answer depends upon which religious ideology is most compatible with your personal life ideology. It's also natural to wonder which Christian Division represents the best and truest Christian Church? And the answer to that question is usually a function of one's cultural heritage. Nonetheless, there is one thing certain in regards to all Christians. We're all called to love our gracious and benevolent Creator with all our heart, with all our soul, and with all our mind. And in a similar manner, we're all called to love all of our fellow sentient sisters and brothers in the same manner as we love ourself. This is our Creator's Law of Love. If you do this first, then all the rest becomes personal commentary. I'm convinced this personal commentary has little or no value to the Lord of Life and the Lord of Love. Love as if your spiritual life depends upon it! Because it does! Do you love your enemies and pray for them? Didn't Jesus teach this Cosmic Commandment?

## **4.5 When Church and Science First Collided**

The collision between Church and science was inevitable. The Church actively sought to dominate, control and ultimately command the minds of the People. If everyone believes the same way, then there's no social unrest. If there's no social unrest, then there's no discontentment. If there's no discontentment, then there's no malcontentment. And a society without malcontentment makes for a very happy society. Certainly, a rational mind can readily perceive some social value to the Church's religious-political system. However, this system is purchased at a great price – that price being the loss of the Freedom of the Mind and the loss of the Freedom of Sentient Intelligence. Hear the dictates and commands of these ancient religious authorities: “Believe and think as we instruct you, or the Hammer of God shall fall upon you. And know this. We are the Hammer of God!” Needless to say, our forefathers were not interested in the pursuit of the Truth; that is, the Cosmic Truth. Give praise to your loving Creator that some courageous and noble men boldly stepped forward to push against the boundaries of superstitious

ignorance. These were the mighty Truth Seekers who actively sought the real truth about nature, life, the universe and God. The first two of these mighty men were Nicolaus Copernicus and Galileo Galilei.

## **Nicolaus Copernicus, The Father of Modern Astronomy**

Nicolaus Copernicus was born February 19, 1473 and died May 24, 1543 (70 years old). Copernicus was a contemporary of Martin Luther. Luther was born ten years after Copernicus's birth, and he died three years after Copernicus's death. However, Copernicus was a very devout Roman Catholic. It's also noted that Copernicus never married. He was a natural born citizen of Poland, but his vernacular language was German. In regards to the city in which he grew up, his family and the vast majority of the citizens were German descendants. Throughout the history of Europe, a country's boundary lines were always subject to change. Such changes were determined by which country had the strongest military power at any given moment. Copernicus spoke Polish, German, Italian, Latin and ancient Greek. Copernicus also pursued his education until the age of thirty. By the power of his very extensive education, he was defined to be a lawyer, physician, astronomer, mathematician, economist, a classics scholar, translator, diplomat, governor, artist, and a Catholic cleric. He also received a Doctorate in Law. He was a true Renaissance Man, thus being highly respected and admired by Church and State. Copernicus was well know throughout Europe. Even Popes and very influential Cardinals pursued an understanding of Copernicus's works, theories and opinions. This especially included his astronomical investigations, models and conclusions.

Prior to Copernicus, it was extensively and adamantly believed the earth was the center of the universe and the sun, all the planets, and all the stars revolved around the earth. This not only meant the earth was the center of the universe, but mankind was also the center of the universe. This is called "the geocentric model of celestial spheres", or simply "the geocentric model" The ancient Greek word "geo" means "earth." Consequently, the word "geocentric" literally means "earth center." Eventually, the Roman Catholic Church would decide the geocentric model was defined in the Bible, and therefore, this model has to be absolutely true. Even Martin Luther and most Protestant leaders agreed with the Catholic Church on this matter. The Church's position was crystal clear: to not believe in the Biblically based geocentric model was an act of heresy, thus making the disbeliever a heretic. And there was only one punishment for heretics – burning at the stake. The Church easily justified this most hideous punishment as a necessary method that could lead the doomed heretic to his or hers ultimate spiritual salvation. In the Church's mind it was far, far better to burn the heretic's body and hopefully save the heretic's spirit than to allow the heretic to slide into damnation where the soul is

burned without ceasing. Why is it that most of mankind's worst atrocities were done in the name and permission of God? Worst of all, this man-made practice still occurs today. Just ask the believers of Jihad.

But what is heresy? In general, the word "**heresy**" means: "an opinion or doctrine at variance with the orthodox or accepted doctrine, especially of a church or religious system." In accordance with the Catholic Church's definition, "**heresy**" means: "the willful and persistent rejection of any article of faith by a baptized member of the Church." Articles of faith are usually determined by Holy Scripture. The Church's usual interpretation was defined this way: "If it's in the Bible, then it's true, no matter what indisputable, objective evidence you may possess!" Ultra conservative Christians still hold this belief to be true. So, to reject the story of Adam and Eve is an act of heresy. To reject the story of Noah and the ark and that Noah lived to be 950 years old is an act of heresy. To reject the reality of purgatory, the doctrine of indulgence, and the spiritual benefits of praying for the dead is an act of heresy. Be assured, the list of heresies goes on and on. It seems to me that sooner or later, somehow or some way, by some event or by some controversy – everyone eventually becomes a heretic. It also seems to me that fanatical religionists who adamantly believe the Bible is infallible constantly perceives other people as being heretics. Thank God it's no longer sanctioned and legal to burn heretics at the stake!

In today's world we're taught in elementary school about Copernicus and the true arrangement of the sun, earth, planets, stars, galaxies, and the immense universe. But at Copernicus's lifetime, such teachings would lead to death. Many scholars believe Copernicus knew he would be tried as a heretic for his astronomical investigations and conclusions. In response to this deadly potential, Copernicus slowly released his astronomical observations and data regarding our solar system's celestial spheres. Ultimately, he would present all of his related work in a single book titled "On the Revolutions of the Celestial Spheres," which is conveniently called "Revolutions." The book directly challenges the correctness of the geocentric model. For the first time in mankind's recorded history, a man's intellectual and scientific efforts conclusively defined the earth and all the planets revolve around the sun. This is called "the heliocentric model of celestial spheres." The ancient Greek word "helio" means "sun." Consequently, the word "heliocentric" literally means "sun center." This frontal attack upon the Church's absolute belief in the geocentric model becomes the first critical collision between Church and science. This is a landmark event in mankind's history, which today is called "the Copernican Revolution." In spite of the cosmic clash with the Church, it was 60 years after Copernicus's death before the Church would pursue Copernicus as a heretic. Here are some of the very slow developments of Copernicus's work on the heliocentric model.

1. About 1506 Copernicus begins his reflections concerning the actual arrangement of the celestial spheres. He soon realizes the geocentric model is incorrect, and he logically and scientifically determines the true arrangement of the celestial spheres; that is, the heliocentric model of celestial spheres.
2. About 1514 (8 years later) Copernicus gives a forty page manuscript to some of his friends. The document is called "the Little Commentary," and it addresses his preliminary data and reflections about the heliocentric model. Copernicus's friends accept his work very favorably and urge him to start publishing some of his data and conclusions. Copernicus rejects his friend's recommendations, but instead pursues to obtain more scientific data.
3. About 1532 (18 years later) Copernicus completes his work on the heliocentric model. It's all gathered together into the book *Revolutions*. But he still doesn't publish the book. He doesn't want to risk the scorn to which he would expose himself on account of the novelty and incomprehensibility of his book.
4. Late in 1542 (10 years later) at the age of 70 Copernicus had a stroke and his health quickly deteriorated. As a result of the stroke, Copernicus had his book *Revolutions* printed. On May 24, 1543 two events happened: (1) He was given an advanced copy of *Revolutions* of which it was said he was highly pleased and contented. And (2) He died shortly after receiving his book.
5. Only a mild controversy was initiated as a result of the publication of *Revolutions*. However, in a relatively short period of time a major Church official addressed Copernicanism as heresy. That official's name was Bartolomeo Spina, the Chief Sensor of the Roman Catholic Church. Fortunately for Copernicus and his supporters, Spina unexpectedly died in 1546. However, Spina's friend whose name was Giovanni Tolosani took up the Church's cause against Copernicus. Tolosani was both a theologian and an astronomer. Nevertheless, Tolosani's efforts went unheeded and the Church's charges of heresy against Copernicus were never acted upon for about 60 years. This non-action by the Church resulted in the rapid spread of the Copernican Revolution.
6. The Church finally takes action against Copernicus in the 1600s. This is the result of the Church's investigations against the world's best known heretic Galileo Galilei. Galileo was a very active supporter of the heliocentric model, expanding upon the intellectual truth of the model, and leading the scientific revolution that was spreading across Europe. The conclusion of Copernicus's story is best understood in conjunction with its fellowship with Galileo's story

## **Galileo Galilei, The Father of Modern Science**

Galileo Galilei was born February 15, 1564 and died January 8, 1642 (77 years old). He was born 21 years after Copernicus's death. Galileo was an Italian and a pious Roman Catholic. It's also noted Galileo never married, but had a life-long and dedicated relationship with a woman who bore him three children. He originally considered the priesthood, but his father urged him to attend medical school at the University of Pisa. Physicians were paid much better than the clergy. Up to this time, Galileo showed no interest in science and mathematics. However, he accidentally stumbled into the science and mathematical world while attending the university. He thereby discovered his natural scientific and mathematical interests and abilities, and accordingly became a university professor. During his life he would become a physicist, mathematician, astronomer, philosopher and inventor. He greatly increased the meaning of "applied science and technology."

Galileo's contributions to science and mathematics were prolific, ultimately earning him the titles of: (1) the Father of Modern Observational Astronomy, (2) the Father of Modern Physics, and (3) the Father of Modern Science. Galileo was also a major contributor to the standardization of the scientific method, thus enhancing the innovative combination of scientific experiments and mathematics. Naturally, Galileo wrote several books, including a book dedicated to Copernicus's heliocentric model. The book's title is "Dialogue Concerning the Two Chief Worlds," which is conveniently called "Dialogue." Galileo greatly expanded Copernicus's heliocentric model by using the world's new device called the telescope (originally invented solely for military use and called the spy glass). As an inventor, Galileo constantly improved the design of the telescope, and he's credited as being the first person to use the telescope for astronomical observations.

In the early 1600s, the belief, acceptance and promotion of Copernicus's heliocentric model was relatively establish in the academic community. Galileo's astronomical observations and evaluations provided reasonable proof of the reality of the heliocentric model. As a result, he was an active advocate of Copernicus's heliocentric model. However, the Roman Catholic Church was now actively involved in the opposition to the Copernican model. As defined at the end of the discussion about Copernicus, the Church had already concluded the Bible proved the geocentric model was the absolute truth. Thus, anyone who believe in the heliocentric model was a heretic. Some of the Biblical verses the Church used to prove the geocentric model include the following.

1. Psalm 93:1, Psalm 96:10, and 1 Chronicles 16:30: *Indeed, the world is firmly established, it will not be moved.*
2. Psalm 104:5 & 6: *He established the earth upon its foundations, so that it will not totter forever and ever.*

3. Joshua 10:13 & 14: *Then Joshua spoke to the Lord in the day when the Lord delivered up the Amorites before the sons of Israel, and he said in the sight of Israel, "O sun, stand still at Gibeon, And O moon in the valley of Aijalon. So the sun stood still, and the moon stopped until the nation avenged themselves of their enemies.*

Galileo was well aware of the Church's position on this matter, and he tried to convince the Church that the Bible and the heliocentric model were compatible. He argued the Bible's description was based upon observations from earth, and thus described a different kind of movement of the earth. Galileo argued the Bible was not addressing the rotations of the celestial spheres. The Church adamantly disagreed with Galileo's defense. Let's consider the timeline of the events that followed.

1. In 1616 the Church's opposition to Copernicus's heliocentric model was finalized. The Church publicly decreed that the belief the sun stood still while the earth moved around it was false and altogether contrary to Holy Scripture. Copernicus's book *Revolutions* was suspended until the Church corrected it. The Church also instructed Galileo to abandon all support for Copernicanism or face the consequences of opposing the Church. Galileo complied and for many years stayed away from the controversy.
2. In 1623 a Cardinal whose name was Maffeo Barberini was elected Pope Urban VIII. This new Pope was a friend and admirer of Galileo and had opposed the condemnation of Galileo in 1616. Urban VIII actually requested Galileo to write a book about the pros and cons of the heliocentric model and to be careful not to advocate the heliocentric model. Of course, the intent was to avoid controversy while still being informative. Therefore, the book was written with the authorization of the Pope and the Inquisition.
3. In 1632 Galileo published his book *Dialogue*. In spite of the long history of this matter and the Pope's instructions, Galileo wrote the book in a manner that highly favored the heliocentric model. To add to this blunder, the book was also widely interpreted to make fun of the Pope. Most scholars believe Galileo was not being malicious, but was simply unaware and insensitive to other people's interpretations of the book. If this is true, then he is obviously a far better scientist than a writer. Needless to say, the Pope was furious and ordered Galileo to come to Rome and stand trial for heresy.
4. In February 1633 Galileo arrived in Rome and was tried for heresy. The multiple interrogations and confrontations lasted five months. Finally on June 22, 1633 the Inquisition issued a three part sentence.

- A. Galileo was found “vehemently suspect of heresy.” He was required to “abjure, curse and detest” the specific details of the heliocentric model, whereby these details had already been declared contrary to Holy Scripture.
  - B. Galileo was originally sentenced to formal imprisonment at the pleasure of the Inquisition. This was immediately commuted to house arrest for the rest of his life. He lived nine more years until his death, where the entire time he was under house arrest.
  - C. Galileo’s book Dialogue was banned and publication of all his works (past, present and future) were forbidden.
5. In 1638 Galileo went completely blind. This was four years before his death. In the later months of 1641, Galileo started having fevers and heart palpitations. It is believed these conditions ultimately lead to his death on January 8, 1642. Because he had been judged guilty of heresy, the Catholic Church would not allow Galileo to be buried in any basilica. He was therefore buried in a small room adjacent to the Basilica of Santa Croce, where his father and relatives were buried. In 1737 he was reburied in the main body of the Basilica.
  6. In 1718 the Church’s publishing ban of Galileo works was lifted with the exception of the uncensored version of Dialogue. Then
  7. In 1758 the Church’s ban on all works advocating the heliocentric model was lifted with the exceptions of Copernicus’s uncensored version of Revolutions and Galileo’s uncensored version of Dialogue.
  8. In 1835 the Church’s publishing bans against Copernicus’s uncensored version of Revolutions and Galileo’s uncensored version of Dialogue were finally lifted. It took the Catholic Church 202 years after Galileo’s heresy trial to finally provide some glimmer of acknowledgement that the sun stands still while the earth and all the planets revolve around the sun.

**Now, here are the points to remember.** The Roman Catholic Church’s prosecution and conviction of Nicolaus Copernicus and Galileo Galilei as heretics provides indisputable proof that the Church and Bible are fallible. Mankind’s infallibility often leads to injustice, discrimination, abuse, injury and inequity. Yet, there are many fanatical Christians who adamantly believe the Bible is infallible, and therefore Holy. Their basis for this belief has been the same throughout the centuries: “I believe what I believe simply because the Bible tells me so!” I once read a statistical survey revealed that about twenty percent of Americans actually believe the sun revolves around the earth. My inherent skeptical nature doesn’t allow me to believe this statistic is true. In fact, I don’t want to believe it’s true because I don’t want my fellow citizens to appear so ignorant. Our gracious,

benevolent and loving Creator gave mankind intelligence so that we can think, evaluate and analyze what issues are rational, sensible and logical. We're responsible to first pursue the Cosmic Truth, and then second, to discern the truth from the antitruth. However, we remain to be imperfect people in an imperfect world. Subsequently, we're fallible – both individually and as a collective. But that's OK! After all, didn't God create us this way. In the long-term it doesn't really matter that we're all infallible. Ultimately, only one thing really matters. That one thing is to fulfill our Creator's great exhortation to love one another just as He loves each and every one of us.

## **4.6 The Schisms Between Church and Science Widen**

During the lives of Martin Luther, Nicolas Copernicus and Galileo Galilei, Western Europe was ruled by what is called "**the Sacred Circle**." The Sacred Circle was composed of three very powerful components: (1) the aristocracy lead by the hereditary lineage of the King, (2) the Roman Catholic Church leaders whose political intrigues were as self-serving as the King's court, and (3) the text of the Bible as interpreted by the Church leaders. For many centuries, the Kings invoked the doctrine of "the Divine Right of Kings." Accordingly, God first wisely creates the King; and second, God then wisely protects the King. Subsequently, the Church sanctions the King; and in return, the King defends the Church. All religious, political, social and economical elements of society were controlled and manipulated by the Sacred Circle. Furthermore, any and all forms of competition were immediately crushed. That was true until Martin Luther started the Protestant Reformation. And once this genie was freed from its bottle, there was no way of putting the genie back into the bottle. The pursuit of truth and the Freedom of Religion became the imminent goals of the People's intelligentsia. As a result, an intellectual cultural revolution eventually exploded upon all Western European nations. This cultural revolution would eventually be called the **Age of Enlightenment**, or simply "the **AoE**." The AoE has become the single greatest influence upon the social, political, economical and religious evolution of mankind. Mankind's collective fabric is what it is today because of the great minds and spirits of the men who forged this great AoE. Ultimately, the power of Church and State would be immensely diminished while the power of science and the People would expand to the benefit of all.

### **The Age of Enlightenment**

There are no agreed and definitive dates that mark the beginning and ending of the Age of Enlightenment, abbreviated as "**AoE**." A typical starting date is 1650 (about 100 years after Luther's death), and a typical ending date is 1800 (about the

time of the Napoleonic Wars). The goals of the AoE were fourfold: (1) to reform society using philosophical reasoning rather than the traditional methods of the King's power and the Church's dogmatic faith, (2) to free the People from fearful superstitions, intolerance and prejudices, (3) to end the multiple abuses of the Church and State, and (4) advance mankind through the powers of philosophical reasoning and scientific endeavors, discoveries and applications. In fact, the industrial revolution began during the time of the AoE. In turn, the industrial revolution created immense economic and employment opportunities which reinforced society's newly developing middle class. The value and esteem for science grew by leaps and bounds throughout all levels of society. It should also be noted that some of the AoE science pioneers prepared the way for the evolutionary theories of Charles Darwin. (His book "On The Origin Of Species" was published in 1859.) Another very important feature of the AoE were the multiple reforms regarding laws, crimes and punishments. This initiated the legal enforcement of due process and protected the People from cruel and unusual punishment.

One of the greatest results of the AoE concerned the social-political system of Democracy. The ideas and ideals of Democracy had long been on mankind's mind, but society was never brave enough, or powerful enough, to challenge the Sacred Circle. However, the advantages of Democracy were a natural consequence of the AoE's philosophical thinking. Needless to say, the AoE had a natural affinity for Democracy, and America's founding fathers naturally gravitated to this facet of the AoE. As a result of the AoE's oppositional nature to the abusive powers of the Church and State, society was in great flux, which in turn led to great social unrest. Consequently, the Age of Enlightenment was also the Age of Military Revolutions. The birth of Democracy came with great pain, but the joy of this new child was well worth the pain and labor endured. Here's a partial list of the AoE's Hall of Fame. The intent of listing these great men and their contributions is to attain an overall perspective of the greatness of the Age of Enlightenment. The AoE is a quantum leap in the scientific, political and spiritual evolution of mankind. While many of these men's names are not familiar to the daily citizen (including myself), these are very important men that helped advanced the evolution of mankind. **In addition it's noted that the vast majority of these leaders of enlightenment were also very devoted Christians.**

1. Francis Bacon, English philosopher, actually preceded the AoE, is credited for initiating the AoE, and significantly influenced most AoE philosophers who came after him.
2. Thomas Hobbes, English philosopher, especially political philosophy, and is responsible for the initial concepts of the Social Contract, one of the foundational elements of Democracy.
- 3 John Locke, English, political philosopher, and expanded the philosophies of Bacon and Hobbes.

- 4 Baruch Spinoza, Dutch philosopher.
5. Voltaire, French philosopher.
- 6 Jean-Jacques Rousseau, Swiss political philosopher.
7. David Hume, Scottish philosopher.
8. Immanuel Kant, German philosopher and physicist.
9. Denis Diderot, French philosopher and the first compiler of the Encyclopedia.
10. Pierre Bayle, French philosopher and literary critic.
11. Adam Smith, Scottish economist and philosopher, and is the Father of Modern Economics.
12. Cesare Beccaria, Italian criminal law reformer.
13. Balthasar Bekker, Dutch philosopher theologian.
14. Edmund Burke, Irish political philosopher.
15. Hugo Kollataj, Polish philosopher who specialized in the reform of educational methods.
16. Sir Isaac Newton, the ultimate mathematician and physicist, the Father of Modern Physics.
17. Gottfried Leibniz, philosopher and mathematician Newton's rival.
18. Jean le Rond d'Alembert, mathematician and physicist.
19. George Berkeley, Irish philosopher and mathematician.
20. Robert Hooke, English scientist, the leading scientific experimenter of the AoE, and the Father of the Science of Microscopy.
21. Antoine Lavoisier, French scientist, a founder of modern chemistry.
22. Ekaterina Dashkova, Russian educator and scientist, associated with the establishment of the Russian Academy of Sciences.
23. F. L. Buffon, French biologist.
24. Carl von Linnaeus, Swedish physician, botanist and zoologist.
25. The American members of the AoE include Thomas Jefferson, Benjamin Franklin, James Madison, Alexander Hamilton, and Thomas Paine.

**Now, here are the points to remember.** The AoE lead to the immense expansion of physical science, natural science, social science, political science and religion. The center of social-political power shifted from the Sacred Circle to the People, and the scientific pursuit of truth rapidly expanded without any affective opposition from the Church. Nevertheless, new science discoveries and developments would incur new clashes with the Church. Some of these clashes are still actively encountered today. The truth seekers of science are aligned on one side of the battle field, and the superstitious protectors of ancient-ancient Biblical text are aligned on the other side. Who shall win the residual battles of this great collision between Church and science?

## **Today's Church Versus the Science of Evolution**

I've always been baffled by today's ultra conservative Christians (who are also called Bible Literalists and Christian Creationists) who oppose the science of evolution. I understand why the Creationists object to the theory of evolution – that being their ultra rigid and uncompromising belief in the infallibility of the Bible, and specifically the Biblical account of the creation of Adam and Eve. The belief in the spontaneous creation of Adam is mandated in the Christian doctrine of “**substitutionary atonement**” which is the heart and soul of the Christian doctrine of “**eternal salvation.**” I can also understand why the Creationists of the 19th century opposed Darwin's concepts of evolution. They were far more superstitious than today's Christians, and they didn't have the enhanced power of science to help enlighten them. In comparison, today's Christians have the magnificent benefits and blessings of modern science. It's also noted that the modern science of evolution is light years beyond Darwin's simple explanations of natural selection and the survival of the fittest. In addition, the science of evolution has spawned the relatively new science of genetics. Today's evolutionists talk about genes and alleles; genetic drift and genetic flow; molecular biology and DNA; natural selection, artificial selection and sexual selection; and modern evolutionary synthesis (MES). They also use high levels of mathematics to calculate statistical probabilities that are now part of evolutionary science. Evolution has become a very complex and complicated science, and only the brightest minds can truly understand the principle details of the science. Lastly, could our Creator's method of creation be the process of evolution? I'll re-visit this issue in Section 4.11 and under the subsection titled “The Ultimate Collision Between the Science of Evolution and Christianity.”

One of the most interesting debates within evolutionary science is macroevolution versus microevolution. Macroevolution is the belief that a biological organism can continuously mutate through incredibly long periods of time (billions of years) and will eventually become a new species of biological organism. Of course, no one can prove or disprove this belief. From the standards

and rigors of scientific investigation, macroevolutionary theory is only intellectual speculation. On the other hand, the microevolutionist contend all evolutionary observations only support the fact that genetic mutations only change the organism and does not create a new organism. A mutation is a copying error of the organism's DNA. What causes a DNA copying error remains a mystery. But, when you consider how inconceivably complex this copying process is, then you would think genetic mutations are a very common occurrence. Furthermore, one mutation built upon a previous mutation is very rarely beneficial to the organism. Accordingly, the microevolutionist believes the Laws of Genetics are conservative, and are not creative. A biological quantum jump of an associated organism requires intellectual creativity, thus being an event that is far greater than a simple change in the organism's DNA.

Now, if you think this discussion is confusing and without conclusion, then you're astutely correct. However, if you think the science of evolution is a challenge to embrace, then consider the Biblical story of the creation of Adam. You'll find this story in Genesis 2: 7.

*Then the Lord God formed man of dust from the ground,  
and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man  
became a living being.*

To me personally, this simple Biblical story of mankind's creation is the result of a simple proposition derived from a simple mind. Biblical scholars believe Moses wrote the book of Genesis, and Moses lived about 3,500 years ago. At my age, many "young people" think I'm radically old fashion, this being a natural condition of the human experience. Nevertheless, I'm not as old fashion as the Bible. Why does life have to be so mysterious and so confusing? To help alleviate some of the mystery and confusion, I recommend a PBS documentary titled "Journey Of Man." The documentary is produced by Tigress Productions, hosted by Dr. Spencer Wells, and a DVD can be purchased from PBS's website. The documentary defines how science – by the use of genetic marking techniques – has been able to genetically decode the distribution of mankind across the earth.

Beyond any reasonable doubt, the science of evolution is a very well established science that's built upon the scientific foundation of detailed: (1) observations, (2) experiments, (3) research, (4) mathematical calculations, and (5) peer review, analyses and technical response. I personally find evolution's associated feature of genetic coding to be extremely interesting. Furthermore, almost every national and international scientific academy on earth has provided a public position that evolution is a very valid science which is conclusively supported by the evidence gathered. As discussed above, the community of evolutionists have vigorous debates regarding various elements of their science. It's only natural for honest, professional differences to occur within evolutionary

science. And of course, this is typical of all branches of sciences. There are also theistic evolutionists who find theological theory compatible with evolution theory. After all, couldn't mankind's Creator create the evolutionary process as His method of biological advancement on earth? This method may not only have been applied on earth but may have been used on thousands of life-bearing planets scattered across our Creator's cosmos (whatever that may be). I've even read that some people believe earth is part of a galactic system where higher sentient beings are the caretakers of life on earth. Accordingly, these caretakers brought biological life to earth in a collaborated effort with the Creator. Could you prove or disprove this theoretical guess? The truth is we really don't know much about the creation of life on earth – now do we?

This much we know for sure. No one really knows how the universe was created. No one really knows if mankind's Creator is "The First Source" of the universe. As far as mankind knows, our Creator could be a thousand times removed from The First Source of Creation. Even in the world-to-come, mankind may never learn the truth of these mighty perplexing enigmas. So why would anyone take a rigid and sometimes belligerent stance in regards to something they can neither prove nor disprove? Whatever happened to reasonable, sensible, rational and logical thinking and reflections? I've personally decided to commit myself to discerning what I objectively know from what I subjectively believe, and thus dedicate myself to be a proponent only of what I objectively know. Do you remember the first and second paradigms of life?

## **The Vastness of Creation (The Universe)**

It's a commonly held belief by ultra conservative Christian Creationists that God created the entire universe. But just how big is the universe? This is a question most people have never considered and couldn't care less about the answer. After all, what difference does it really make in our terrestrial world? Well, I believe it's important as well as interesting. If mankind's Creator truly did create the entire universe, then a conceptual idea of the size of the universe would provide some insight of the power and magnificence of our Creator. With the advent of the space telescope, such as the Hubble telescope, astronomers have immensely increased a body of astronomical knowledge that far, far exceeds what can be observed from the surface of the earth. Let us now gaze upon the stars. I think it requires more imagination than intelligence to be an astronomer. And the details of descriptions, the highly unique terminology, and the quantitative values are simply astronomical. The study of space isn't easy and the associated numerical values boggle the mind. Meanwhile, the great mysteries of space attract the interest and attention of most people. For your own benefit, do the best you can to comprehend "the big picture" of the following astronomical lessons.

## **The Vastness of the Stars**

Let's first consider the classification of stars. Astronomers have established ten main classifications of stars based upon the spectral temperature of a specific star. This means the color of a star defines the temperature of that star, where the coolest star are red in color and the hottest stars are blue in color. These main temperature classifications are first defined by a letter. In descending order of temperature, these letters are: O, B, A, F, G, K, M, R, N, and S. Each main classification is then divided into ten sub-classifications. These sub-classifications are identified by a number 0 through 9. Hence, there are 100 classifications of stars (10 letters times 10 numbers = 100 classifications). For example, earth's sun is a G2 yellow star with a surface temperature of about 6,000 degrees Kelvin (11,300 degrees Fahrenheit). Temperatures of stars range from about 3,000 degrees Kelvin (5,650 degrees Fahrenheit) to about 30,000 degrees Kelvin (56,500 degrees Fahrenheit). These temperatures represent surface temperatures of the respective stars. A star's internal temperature is believed to be as high as 14,000,000 degrees Kelvin (25,000,000 degrees Fahrenheit). The temperatures and energy values of stars are simply beyond meaningful human comprehension. But I'm sure astronomers are wonderfully enthralled by such large mathematical values.

Now, why has astronomy provided such a massive classification of stars? It's because there's such a massive quantity of stars. First, our galaxy is said to have about 100 billion stars. Second, astronomers estimate there are about one billion galaxies. How do astronomers determine these astronomical values, and how accurate are their calculated estimations? If our galaxy represents an average value of the number of stars in a galaxy, then the total number of stars in the universe is about 100 billion, billion stars. This is numerically indicated as 100,000,000,000,000,000,000. I personally believe the immensity of the observed universe is simply beyond man's comprehension, even to astronomers.

## **The Vastness of Our Galaxy**

Let's now consider the size of our galaxy the Milky Way. Please bear with me during this exercise. My intention is to provide a very simple basis by which we can grasp the awesome size of our galaxy. I also want to demonstrate how limiting our human earthly experience really is. In addition, I would like to prick the interest of the reader in regards to the vastness and mystery of space travel. I've talked to several people who speculate the world-to-come involves space travel. How else did our psychic entities (our spirits) get to earth for implanting into our avatars (our bodies)? Likewise, upon the death of our avatars, how will our spirits return to our Creator. Lastly, I am using the most simple descriptions to address

this complicated topic, and sometimes I transcribe complicated astronomical terminology into my own simple description. It's very important to have a grasp of the immense size of our galaxy, especially if you have an open mind that heaven may actually be our galaxy and mankind is destined to be star travelers. Perhaps your first star travel experience occurs when you physically die and thus depart planet earth and arrive on planet heaven. Beam me up Scotty!

1. Our Galaxy's General Description: Our galaxy is shaped like two fried eggs that are stuck together back-to-back. The galaxy is composed of two parts: (1) the nucleus or galactic hub, that being the egg yolk, and (2) the galactic disk, that being the egg white. The nucleus is composed of a cluster of stars and other unknown galactic materials, which remain to be a great mystery to astronomers. One of these elements is believed to be a super massive black hole. The nucleus is then surrounded by the galactic disk that's also composed of many stars and solar systems. The galactic disk also has significant depth. The whole disk then revolves around the nucleus. Whether you're in the galactic nucleus or the galactic disk, you see a multitude of stars in every direction you look. Our sun is approximately two-thirds the distance from the center of the nucleus to the outer edge of the disk.
2. The Parsec: Space is so massive that it's not measured in distance but is actually measured in an association of time and distance, ultimately derived from the speed of light and the light year. Even the speed of light is too slow for astronomers to measure space. Astronomers use a quantity call "parsecs" to measure space. One parsec is the distance traveled in 3.26 light years. The actual definition of a parsec is quite technical and is associated with the heliocentric parallax of one angular second of an arc. If you really understand that, then you must be an astronomer, or a space alien, or an extra terrestrial (an ET). Lastly, if you listen closely, you'll hear the word parsec used in many sci-fi TV shows and movies, especially including the Star Wars sagas.
3. The Parsec Versus the Speed of Light: If you could travel at the speed of light then it would take 3.26 earth years to travel one parsec. In Star Trek jargon, this is a warp speed of 3.26. However, one parsec is still too small of a space measurement for astronomers. They use 1,000 parsecs as a measure of space. 1,000 parsecs is defined as 1 kpc (one kiloparsec). As an example, 1,000 light years equals 0.3 kpc. This is an immense distance, but we haven't yet started being impress about its immensity.
4. The Light Year: A light year is the distance a beam of light travels in one earth year, or 5.88 million, million miles. This is numerically 5,880,000,000,000 miles. Does this numerical value begin to impress you?

5. The Parsec in Miles: A parsec is then 19.17 million, million miles, where the numerical value is 19,168,800,000,000 miles (3.26 light years times 5.88 million, million miles = 19.17 million, million miles). Are you impressed yet?
6. The Galaxy Measured in Parsecs: Returning to the size of our galaxy, the thickness of our galactic disk is estimated to be 1,000 parsecs, the thickness of the nucleus is estimated to be 4,000 parsecs, our sun is estimated to be 10,000 parsecs from the center of the nucleus, and the galaxy's overall diameter is estimated to be 30,000 parsecs.
7. The Galaxy Measured in Time at the Speed of a Parsec: If you could travel at the speed of a parsec, (a warp speed of 3.26) it would take 307 earth years just to cross the depth of the galactic disk; 1,227 earth years to cross the diameter of the nucleus; 3,067 earth years to get from our sun to the center of the nucleus; and 9,202 earth years to travel from one edge of the galaxy to the other edge. (You calculate these values by dividing the values listed in paragraph 6 by 3.26, the value of a parsec as measured in light years.)
8. The Galaxy Measured in Time at the Warp Speed of 10: In Star Trek stories, the typical maximum speed is the warp speed of 10, or 10 times the speed of light. A warp speed of 10 is about the speed of 3 parsecs. If you could travel at the speed of warp 10, then it would take 100 earth years to cross the depth of the galactic disk; 400 earth years to cross the diameter of the nucleus; 1,000 earth years to get from our sun to the center of the nucleus; and 3,000 earth years to travel from one edge of the galaxy to the other edge.
9. Conclusion and Reality Check Regarding Space Travel: Galactic space travel is simply and emphatically beyond the capabilities of our physical bodies and the human experience. Even if you actively lived for 300 earth years, you wouldn't get very far across the galaxy, not even if you were traveling at a warp speed of 10. If you traveled at the warp speed of 10 and lived to be 300 years old, it would take 10 life times just to travel the diameter of our galaxy. And this is in a constant straight line without any meandering or taking any cosmic tour busses. This makes me seriously wonder if space travel is even feasible within the celestial realm. So, if man is to fulfill his visions of space travel, then how do you travel across space?
10. The Galactic Year: Here is one more item to consider about our galaxy. Our sun revolves around the center of the galactic nucleus where one complete revolution around the nucleus is called a galactic year. It's estimated that it takes about 220 million earth years for our sun to revolve one time around the galactic center. Consequently, one galactic year is 220 million earth years (220,000,000 years). According to astronomers, our sun is 4 galactic years old. Our sun is just a toddler in galactic time!

## **The Awe of the Universe and the Awe of God**

If these quantities don't amaze and impress you then you're not paying attention, which is understandable and predictable. The truth is, the concepts of space and space travel are beyond man's intellectual comprehension. It truly does require man's imagination – even a quantum leap of imagination – to grasp the vastness of our galaxy and the entire universe. The intellectual grasp of the universe is kiloparsecs beyond the intellectual grasp of our galaxy. Could mankind really become intergalactic space travelers? Can you imagine traveling to other galaxies and throughout the entire universe? I personally would be happy just to travel across the Milky Way. Our physical nature is totally inadequate and far too fragile to even begin to consider space travel. Science fiction writers realize this physical dilemma so they create imaginative ways to physically transverse space. They travel with warp speeds; use hyper drives; fold space; use portals and star gates; and have even found black holes to be the secret of space travel. Their imaginations are certainly worthy of astronomy, but they still fall short of the reality of space travel from the profound limits our physical nature.

In spite of these immense numerical values of space and time, Christians still place their faith and their celestial lives in the hands of our loving Creator. And if our Creator is the super powerful First Source of the universe, then the concepts of His full nature are far beyond human mysticism. In reflections of the world-to-come, I like the apostle Paul's exhortation best: "Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and which have not entered the heart of man, all that God has prepared for those who love Him."

When I gaze upon the stars I'm totally amazed, impressed, enthralled, mystified, bedazzled, and blown away. I sense a power and a creativeness that's beyond imagination. It's a sensation similar to witnessing the birth of a newborn baby. And like the amazing awe of a newborn baby, stargazing also provides the amazement and wonder of life. I sense God onto the very fiber of my spirit and soul, a sensation that's a communion and a witness of the living reality of God. How great Thou are! How great Thou are! And I sense God communing with me: "This is the handy work of my creative and loving nature, and I have created it for the benefit and pleasure of my children. Come enter and enjoy the life and love I have prepared for all my children." Prepare yourselves for fantastic voyages and adventures into the vastness of God's created universe. Truly and surely, the best is yet to come for those who truly love God. This reminds me of a great Christian hymn "How Great Thou Art!"

### **How Great Thou Art!**

**O Lord my God! When I in awesome wonder,  
Consider all the worlds thy hands have made.**

**I see the stars. I hear the rolling thunder.  
Thy power throughout the universe displayed.**

**Then sings my soul, my Savior God to thee.  
How great thou art! How great thou art!**

**Then sings my soul, my Savior God to thee.  
How great thou art! How great thou art!**

## **4.7 Today's Church Versus the True Nature of Homosexual Orientation**

---

The word "**orientation**" means "the ascertainment of one's true position with respect to one's life-situation, attitudes, preferences, and other similar human attributes." A person's true internalized life-perspective establishes the direction of the person's nature and disposition. Each of us have many human orientations in regards to personal preferences. We have orientation preferences for food, entertainments, sports, style of clothes and physical appearance, employment, church and political affiliations, other similar human traits, and of course, one's sexual orientation and sexual identity. In some cases a human preference is derived and directed by an act of personal will. But in the most important cases our deep-seated personal orientations are derived from the internal nature of our innate human condition, that condition being the heart and soul of our personhood. It's as though we've been preprogrammed with certain internal orientations, preferences and desires. This matter naturally initiates a secondary issue. Just how free is the sentient human being, and how much enslaved are we to our preprogrammed orientations, preferences and desires? This debate continues without end, but there are two things we all agree upon. No one wants to be a robot, and no one especially wants to be a slave. It seems we've also been preprogrammed to "live free or die!"

## **Sexual Orientation and Sexual Identity**

In today's modern world, science addresses human sexual matters in conjunction with a person's "sexual orientation and sexual identity." For convenience, I designate this phrase as "SO/SI," and I pronounce the phrase just as it appears to sound (so-si). One of the most active topics of SO/SI is heterosexuality and homosexuality. Once again for convenience purposes, I use the simple word "bigender" to designate heterosexuality and the word "unigender" for homosexuality. With this preliminary information established, let's now address the issue at hand. This issue concerns the Christian Church's unfair and unreasonable ostracizing and condemnation of America's unigender citizens. Once again, modern science has accumulated a mass of scientific information regarding this very intense social issue.

First, it should be clear that the human body (our avatar) has three centers with gender identification and association. There's body gender, brain gender, and genetic gender. Somehow in our Creator's wisdom and grace, He has allowed multiple variations of our three gender centers. The vast majority of men have male genders in each one of their gender centers. Likewise, the vast majority of women have female genders in each one of their gender centers. Then there are the other various gender types which include unigender persons, bisexual persons, transgender persons, and other gender variations that are rarely encountered (especially genetic gender variations). In today's modern world, the vast majority of scientists who are involved in the science of sexual development and sexual life style believe a person's SO/SI is determined either by genetic coding (a genetic effect) or by prenatal development (a biological effect). This means a person is born with a predetermined gender configuration. Therefore, a bigender person is born as a heterosexual person, and a unigender person is born as a homosexual person. It's also noted that the majority of medical and psychological scientists believe unigender persons are attracted to other unigender persons of their same sex. Accordingly, a unigender male is attracted to other unigender males, and a unigender female is attracted to other unigender females.

Now, it should be clear in the reader's mind that this is a general condition, whereby the actual conditions encountered vary significantly as a result of "the Human Factor." Humans have the ability to complicate and confuse any subject matter, thereby making it more difficult to evaluate and predict the general conditions. Points of exception are built upon points of exception, thus creating minor elements that become the focus of disagreement, debate and highly contested arguments. Only a sensible, rational, logical and disciplined mind can discern the truth of the matter. I personally defer to the knowledge, wisdom and expertise of the professional medical science industries including medical doctors, neurologists, psychiatrists, psychologists, geneticists, sexologists and other related specialists.

As a result of the human factor, the study of SO/SI becomes blurred by individuals who willfully engage in immoral and detrimental sexual relationships. This is true of bisexual persons as well as unisexual persons. Even though we're born with a natural sexual orientation and sexual identity, the sentient human being has the ability to choose and practice whatever sexual escapades they desire. Simply put, they willfully and actively desire to fulfill their immediate, selfish, sexual gratifications. The human sexual drive has an immense effect upon the individual, and its collective social power should never be underestimated. Whenever sexual relationships become detrimental, degrading or depraving to another person, then a victim is created. Creating victims is an act of immorality, and uncontrolled immorality shall eventually weaken, devastate and ultimately destroy a nation. Such immorality is pure hedonism, and pure hedonism shall eventually mutate into a mind numbing cancer that's incredibly deadly to Democracy. Beware the potential power of sex. When the collective of sexual relationships are founded upon true, sincere and genuine love, then the nation prospers. But when the collective of sexual relationships are founded upon selfish desires of immediate self-gratification, then the nation greatly suffers. However, let it be crystal clear that this great truth has no bearing in regards to one's SO/SI. Sexual hedonism effects bigender people and unigender people without any discrimination.

## **What Causes Unigender Development?**

There are four main theories for the cause of unigender development: (1) a genetic source which a person is born with, (2) a biological source which affects the brain and which occurs during prenatal development, (3) psychological and environmental influences which occur in early life experiences of human character development, and (4) any possible combination of the above three theories.

1. SO/SI Is a Genetic Effect: In accordance with this theory there's a predominant bigender sex gene and there's a recessive unigender sex gene. Scientists have not found the so called "gay gene," and many sex experts believe there's no such gene. Nevertheless, this theory remains to be the most popular theory regarding unigender development. Now, here's the question to consider and resolve. Do you determine a person's gender by the person's genetic composition; that is, the female's standard XX sex chromosome versus the male's standard XY sex chromosome? There are many mutated forms of the known sex chromosome. Here are some other chromosome combinations that are well documented by medical science: (1) the XXY sex chromosome (called Klinefelter's Syndrome), (2) the XYY sex chromosome (only affects the male gender), (3) the XXX sex chromosome (only affects the female gender), (4) the X sex chromosome (called Turner's syndrome and only affects females), and (5) the Y sex chromosome. There's also a sexual development condition

called Androgen Insensitivity Syndrome (AIS). The severity of AIS varies, and what is defined as “complete AIS” (CAIS) is a very unique sexual disorder. A CAIS patient has the standard XY male chromosome but also has a completely female body except there’s no uterus, fallopian tubes or ovaries. Furthermore, the CAIS patient has testes that have been absorbed into the abdomen. Now, here’s the point to remember. Determining a person’s true gender is not as simple and straight forward as the vast majority of Americans believe. In spite of the common sense attraction of this theory, the medical and science experts cannot secure the definitive scientific evidence that proves this theory is scientifically viable.

2. SO/SI Is a Biological Effect: In the first few weeks of prenatal life, a fetus has no anatomic or hormonal sexual differences. In fact, the physiological appearance of all sentient human beings begins the same. The only way to tell the sex of the initial fetus is by genetic testing. In addition, the physiological appearance of the initial fetus is that of a female. It’s said the female form is the default path of fetal development. It’s also noted the male fetus development is called the masculinization of the fetus. Alas, the ambiguity of sexual identification begins immediately at biological conception. Sexual differentiation begins about the fourth or fifth week of fetus development. This is when sexual genetic coding begins, and it begins with the fetus producing specific types of hormones. The genetic female produces one set of hormones which promote the development of the physiological female. The genetic male produces another set of hormones which promote the development of the physiological male. Some hormones prevent certain types of mutations, while other hormones initiate certain types of mutations. Thus begins the amazingly complicated, highly fragile, and excessively vulnerable processes of prenatal sexual development. A sentient human being is far, far more fragile before they’re born than after they’re born. And finally consider this. Sexual differentiation of the fetus is only the first part of sexual differentiation. Final sexual maturity is completed by the genetically initiated process of puberty. And of course, puberty involves the processing of more hormones. The ultra complicated and mystifying process of sexual development is truly beyond human comprehension, and the slightest mistake could cause significant variations. In spite of the common sense attraction of this theory, the medical and science experts cannot secure the definitive scientific evidence that proves this theory is scientifically viable.
3. SO/SI Is Caused by Early Psychological and Environmental Influences: There have been many scientific studies regarding the male unigender person, and whereby their developed SO/SI is the effect of early psychological and environmental influences. This theory originated about 100 years ago. The theory involves: (1) the specific character types of the

mother and father, and (2) the critical period of male development that's about the first four years of the son's life. Some experts call it "the classic homosexual triangular pattern." In this pattern, the mother overly demonstrates and expresses her emotions and attitudes for her son. She is also excessively dominating and controlling of both her son and husband. On the other hand, the father is described as usually being unsympathetic, detached, hostile, and is often away from home. Under these conditions, it's only natural for the husband and wife relationship to be founded upon animosity – and too many times the relationship is founded upon belligerent animosity. Now, there's a natural developmental phase in which all young males must psychologically dis-identify from their mothers and then shift their psychological identification to their fathers. It's believed this must occur in order for the son to attain a healthy sense of maleness. When this psychological transference fails to occur, then the son's SO/SI naturally develops as a unigender male person. It's very important to realize that under this theory the son's SO/SI is determined beyond his control and desires. He has no choice in being a unigender person. Finally, how is this theory associated with the female gender. A daughter is naturally exempt from the psychological shift of male sexual identification because her healthy sense of femaleness remains associated with her mother. This is also why the theory only applies to the male unigender person. Obviously, there's significant dissatisfaction with the theory. In spite of the common sense attraction of this theory, the medical and science experts cannot secure the definitive scientific evidence that proves this theory is scientifically viable.

4. SO/SI Is Caused By Some Combination of the First Three Theories: This theory has become very popular within the sexology industry. In addition, the experts also believe there may be other unknown factors (beyond the first three theories) that may contribute to SO/SI development. Needless to say, the extreme scientific vagueness of this theory is self-evident. Technically speaking, it's not even a scientific theory. It's only intuitional speculation. You might as well believe there are pink and blue sex fairies that flutter about, using their magic wands to disperse a person's sexual orientation and sexual identity. In the event this theory should be true (try to definitively prove it's not true), then note that the person still has no choice as to being either a bigender person or a unigender person.

In spite of all the scientific research that has been done in the benefit of understanding homosexuality, mankind cannot begin to find the cause (or causes) of unigender development. Consequently, whatever a person believes about unigender development is nothing more than an act of personal faith; that is, a person

believing what they believe simply because that's what they want the truth to be. Under any circumstances, from my personal reflections of the pursuit of truth, I've learned one very important life-principle. When in doubt, love anyway.

## **Brain Gender and the Human Mind**

I believe it's a popular belief unigender persons have a brain gender that's different from their body gender. In other words, a male unigender person has a male body with a female gender brain. Likewise, a female unigender person has a female body with a male gender brain. In general, unigender persons strongly disagree with this proposition. The disagreement is mostly based upon the belief there's a natural, intrinsic dignity in all sentient human beings, and this dignity is totally independent of a person's SO/SI. This special dignity is given in love by mankind's gracious and benevolent Creator. It's also believed the proposition implies there's a non-intended developmental mishap that's either created by a genetic mutation or created during prenatal development. It's also believed by many people this developmental mishap represents an unnatural event; and therefore, an undesirable event. These are prejudicial and erroneous beliefs that have been embraced throughout mankind's history. In contrast, supporters of democratic equality deeply believe unigender persons are intentionally created as they are, thus serving an intentional purpose of mankind's wise and loving Creator. No human life is ever created unless it's our Creator's specific and intentional will.

The above proposition can be neither proved nor disproved, and it's almost always emotionally charged. One day I found myself reflecting upon the issue. Almost immediately my thoughts began to consider the nature and essence of the human mind. The sentient mind has mystical elements that baffle the human imagination, and it's said the human mind effects every element of the human experience. Here are some of my reflections regarding the sentient human mind.

1. What is the human mind, and how does it affect the human experience? The mind is defined to be "the element, part, substance, or process that reasons, thinks, feels, wills, perceives, judges and other similar features of the human experience." The science of psychology defines the mind to be "the totality of conscious and unconscious mental processes and activities of the human organism." I believe the mind is the sentient processing feature that provides sensory perceptions, cognitive operations, intellectual processing, volitional operations, emotional processing, pleasure receptivity, sexual orientation functions, rationality operations, and moral differentiation. The mind is the heart and soul of the sentient human being.

2. How many minds are there? The science of psychology already defines mankind has two minds – the conscious mind and the unconscious mind. Is there a spiritual mind that's an element of the psychic entity as well as a physical mind that's an element of the corporeal brain? If you believe in spiritual life after physical death, then you must also believe human beings have two minds. Otherwise, how does the spirit/soul fulfill all the mind functions described in paragraph 1 above? Does the spiritual mind have a gender, and does the spiritual body have a gender?
3. Why is the physical brain so susceptible to mishaps such as mental retardation, autism, schizophrenia, bipolar disorder, and many, many more miserable conditions such as Alzheimer's disease, chronic depression, and ADHD (attention deficit hyper activity disorder)? Is Alzheimer's disease the deletion of information and memories, or is it the inability to recall information and memories? How does a person get a photographic mind? What is a sound and healthy mind, and what is a warped, dysfunctional and insane mind?
4. How much does the person control the mind, and how much does the mind control the person? And then, how much does the mind effect our sexuality, and how much does our sexuality effect the mind?
5. How does hypnosis work, and why are some people susceptible to it while others are not? Can you really brainwash a person, whereby they do evil deeds that are not their intentional desire? Why does the mind dream, and why does the mind dream nightmares? Do demonic entities really exist, and is it the human mind they desire to possess? When the mind is being controlled by outside forces, is it the physical mind or the spiritual mind that's being affected? When charismatic Christians "speak in tongues" (glossolalia), are their minds possessed by a spiritual entity such as an angel or even possibly a demon? It seems to me there's a great Cosmic battle that actively seeks to first dominate another person's mind, then to enhance their control of the person's mind, and then finally command the person's mind. Surely and truly, the Freedom of the Mind is the greatest freedom of a sentient human being.
6. How is the conscience related to the mind, and how are some people affected by one's conscience while other people seem to have no conscience at all? Lastly, how does this little thing called love effect the mind, and how does the mind effect our ability and capacity to love?

We'll never know the true answers to these questions – at least, not in this world. But they sure are intriguing questions if you have an internalized interest in these issues. **Now, here's the point to remember.** The mind is an ultra critical element of a person's sexual orientation and sexual identity, and everyone should be fair, reasonable and sensitive regarding the nature and vulnerability of the human

mind. It's interesting to note the American Psychiatric Association previously defined homosexuality as a mental disorder, and thus a non-intended mishap of the human mind. In 1973 they finally removed homosexuality from their official list of mental disorders. Officially speaking, the American Psychiatric Association officially defines homosexuality is not a mental disorder. It has also been defined the change did not occur because of scientific reasons; but instead, it occurred because of the social influence of the times. It was scientific social pressure that lead the American Psychiatric Association to change their formal policy regarding the truth about a unigender person's SO/SI. It seems to me this event is an example of mankind taking one step higher in his spiritual evolution, and thus achieving a brighter enlightenment to the understanding of our Creator's loving nature.

## **The Unigender Citizen's Drive for Democratic Equality**

Prior to World War II Germany was considered to be the most progressive and understanding nation in regards to the natural, sexual development of unigender persons. At this time they were a democratic nation, and they lead the world in scientific endeavors. This included the physical sciences and the social sciences. But then the world was set ablaze with economic, social and political unrest, which then quickly descended into monumental, military confrontations. In Germany, fascism took root under the malevolent leadership of Adolf Hitler and his brood of sadistic toadies. Soon all of Europe (except for Great Brittan) was ruled by sadistic tyrants. What happened to the German people's understanding and support for their unigender citizens. It was totally quashed by the rise of the self-proclaimed superiority of the Aryan race. Homosexuals were quickly defined to be defilers of German blood, and they were therefore condemned as criminals.

To combat the homosexual vermin the German government created the Reich Central Office for the Combating of Homosexuality and Abortion. Gay men and women were corralled and herded to various German camps for rehabilitation. Rehabilitation included humiliation, torture, hormone experimentations conducted by SS doctors, castration, and ultimately execution. It's estimated that as many as 15,000 unigender German citizens were murdered. This fact surprises many people, but it's no more surprising than the fact that the German fascists also murdered as many as 80,000 Freemasons and 5,000 Jehovah's Witnesses. The German's treatment of their own unigender citizens were incredibly cruel and unusual punishment. Nevertheless, any prejudicial actions against a unigender person that is humiliating, detrimental, degrading or depraving is unjust, especially in consideration of Democracy's Law of Equality – all sentient human beings are created equal by their gracious, benevolent and loving Creator.

At this time in America's history, there's a great democratic conflict between America's unigender citizens and the conservative Christian Church. As a general rule, the liberal Christian Church supports the unigender citizens in this conflict. The conflict involves the democratic right of unigender citizens to have legalized same-sex marriages. This great debate has eventually focused upon the semantic use of the word "marriage." Both parties hold very strong beliefs and feelings regarding the full meaning of the word.

## **The Unigender Citizen's Perspective**

The unigender citizens specifically desire to use the venerated word "marriage" because it conveys the emotionally special context of the Institution of Marriage. Marriage conveys the concepts of soul mates and life mates in conjunction with a loving bond that's held in high esteem. The word "marriage" also conveys love's special elements of mutual commitment, dedication and devotion. In a marriage there are three organisms: there's "you," there's "me," and there's "we." The "we organism" is also called the "union organism," and it's noted that all three organisms are equally important. Furthermore, a strong union organism sustains itself by the bonding power of "union love." If either marriage partner fails to exercise union love, then the loving bond shall mutate to "confederate love." The trials and tribulations of life shall ultimately tear apart a marriage that's founded upon confederate love. This perspective of marriage holds an aura of sacredness, thus creating an Institution of Marriage that shouldn't be denied any couple who truly, sincerely and genuinely love one another in the manner described above. Lastly, there are practical social and legal consequences when some other word or phrase is used in lieu of marriage. What do you call a marriage license for a unigender couple? How do you complete important legal documents that require people to define if they're married or single? And in the event a marriage partner is so gravely ill in a hospital and only the person's marriage partner can visit them, the how do the hospital authorities resolve this predicament?

## **The Conservative Christian's Perspective**

The conservative Christian has a very long history, tradition and heritage regarding the Biblical position concerning homosexuality and its perception as an intense immoral state of being. Carefully consider their perspective.

1. Conservative Christians adamantly believe homosexual relationships are directly opposed by God, and such a relationship is a mortal sin against God. Christians also hold marriage to be a very special institution that originated

directly from God and has been traditionally reserved only for bigender couples. Christians are also quick to defend this position by quoting directly from the beginning of the Bible, Genesis 2: 22-25.

*And the Lord God fashioned into a woman the rib which He had taken from the man, and brought her to the man. And the man said, "This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh. She shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man." For this cause a man shall leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave to his wife, and they shall become one flesh. And the man and his wife were both naked and were not ashamed.*

In the history and tradition of the Christian Church, this is a very powerful Bible verse that has been used and quoted since the days of Moses. It is then super reinforced because Jesus quotes the verse (Matthew 19: 5 and Mark 10: 6 – 9) and the apostle Paul also quotes the verse (Ephesians 5: 31).

2. The apostle Paul also provides a definitively clear statement regarding the Church's long standing doctrine regarding homosexuality. This verse is 1 Corinthians: 6, 9 through 11.

*Do you not know that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived; neither **fornicators**, nor idolaters, nor **adulterers**, nor effeminate, nor **homosexuals**, nor thieves, nor the covetous, nor **drunkards**, nor revilers, nor swindlers shall inherit the kingdom of God. And such were some of you; but you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, and in Spirit of our God.*

3. Christians also note that even secular definitions have traditionally defined the word "marriage" in conjunction with the words "male and female" and "husband and wife." Accordingly, by Christian scriptural description and by traditional secular definition, the Institution of Marriage is solely used for bigender couples; that is, limited only to the concepts of "man/husband" in association with "woman/wife." It should be noted that some conservative Christians are receptive to same-sex unions, but they're adamantly opposed to calling same-sex couples as being "married." These Christians suggest using some other word or phrase such as domestic partnership, civil union, social union, gay union, secular civil ceremony, and other similar connotations.

4. When all is said and done, the conservative Christians remain true to the ancient-ancient beliefs of the Bible. Therefore, they believe what they believe because the infallible Bible tells them so. For such Christians the Bible is composed of black and white certainties even when there's sensible, rational and logical reasons to disbelieve what the Bible literarily states. The attitude of these blind-faith Christians is this: "Don't bother me with human reasoning for God Himself through His Holy Spirit wrote the entire Bible using His prophets and apostles as His paper and pen. Consequently, accepting the Bible is fallible in just one place creates uncertainty throughout the entire Bible. It's therefore believed that just one acceptance of the Bible's infallibility would cause the entire collapse of the Christian religion. Regardless what ones religious affiliation may be, a believer with a closed mind and a cold, stone heart – a true blind fanatic – shall never accept the living truth of mankind's reality.

### **The Bible's Ancient, Rigid and Severely Cruel Condemnation of Homosexuality**

It's important to note that Christians who oppose same-sex marriages are correct in the application of their religious faith as Biblically applied to homosexuality. They have the Christian Bible to directly support them in their religious vigor. While there are several Bible verses that oppose homosexuality, there are four verses that are commonly used for Christian opposition to homosexuality. It is also noted that the Bible only addresses male homosexuality and says nothing about female homosexuality.

1. Leviticus 18: 22: *You shall not lie with a male as one lies with a female; **it is an abomination.***
2. Leviticus 20: 13: *If there is a man who lies with a male as those who lie with a woman, both of them have committed a detestable act. **They shall surely be put to death.***
3. 1 Corinthians 6: 9 and 10: *Do you not know that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived; neither **fornicators**, nor idolaters, nor **adulterers**, nor effeminate, nor **homosexuals**, nor thieves, nor the covetous, nor **drunkards**, nor revilers, nor swindlers shall inherit the kingdom of God.*
4. 1 Timothy 1: 8 through 11: *But we know that the Law is good, if one uses it lawfully, realizing the fact that law is not made for a righteous man, but for those who are lawless and rebellious, for the ungodly and sinners, for the unholy and profane, **for those who kill their fathers or mothers, for murders***

*and immoral men and **homosexuals** and **kidnappers** and **liars** and perjurers, and whatever else is contrary to sound teaching, according to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, with which I have been entrusted.*

The first two verses provide a crystal clear condemnation of sexual relationships between two males. I've never seen any Biblical references that address female homosexuality. Also, note that the second verse even condemns these male **homosexuals to be put to death**. This is ultra radical and fanatical, but I haven't heard any Christian arguments to put to death America's homosexual citizens. They seem to choose the Biblical verses they want to believe and disregard the rest. This is called "selective Bible belief." I also wonder if the German fascists used the Bible as their justification for murdering their unigender citizens. In today's modern world, the Book of Leviticus is a very disturbing "oracle of God." Consider the following verses.

1. Leviticus 20: 9 – *If there is anyone who curses **his** father or **his** mother, **he shall surely be put to death**.*

I never heard any Christian address this very harsh oracle of God. Note that the verse only addresses males. So then, what happens when a daughter curses her father or mother? Lastly, is there a minimum age by which this Old Testament Law applies? Have you ever heard a young child say in the midst of a temper tantrum: "I hate you! I wish you were dead!"

2. Leviticus 20: 10 – *If there is a man who commits adultery with another man's wife, or one who commit adultery with his friend's wife, **the adulterer and the adulteress shall surely be put to death**.*

Note that this Old Testament Law applies to both men and women. If this oracle was ever enforced, then a large percentage of Christians would disappear from the flock.

3. Chapter 11 of Leviticus concerns God's laws about which animals can be eaten and which animals cannot be eaten. Leviticus 11: 7 specifically defines that pigs shall not be eaten. Leviticus 11: 10 states that the only water creatures that can be eaten shall have fins and scales. By God's Old Testament laws, man shall not eat scrimp, crabs, lobster, clams, oysters, all fish that have skin in lieu of scales, and so forth. Why do today's Christians disregard these food consumption oracles but adhere to the oracle regarding homosexuality? And what is the penalty for consuming food that God forbids? Don't forget about the apple that Adam and Eve ate and the consequences they had to pay.

## **Additional Reflections**

Biblical scholars define the Book of Leviticus was written by Moses about 3,500 years ago. I simply cannot understand how any modern person can put so much blind faith in religious materials written by mankind's ancient-ancient forefathers. And why aren't Christians consistent in their application of Old Testament oracles. If they did this, then these Bible literalist Christians would also demand the execution of: (1) sons who curse their father or mother, (2) adulterers and adulteress's, and (3) male homosexuals? Again I say, people believe what they believe because that's what they want the truth to be. I would think the consistent application of the Bible would be a very important element to the devout Christian.

I should also note that not all of Leviticus is gloom and doom. Consider Leviticus 19: 18 – “You shall not take vengeance, nor bear any grudge against the sons of your people, **but you shall love your neighbor as yourself.**” Does this also include your neighbors who are unigender persons? Also, I thought Jesus was the first person in the Bible to make the statement to love your neighbor as yourself. I find it good that this commandment is in the Old Testament. Lastly, do you think Jesus loves His unigender neighbors, and do you think He would eat dinner with them just as He did with other sinners that included prostitutes?

## **The Pursuit for the Prize for Lifemate Equality**

Before we end this discussion, we should understand what America's unigender citizens are actually seeking in their drive for marriage equality. What they really desire are the same lawful protections and privileges which all bigender couples are already guaranteed under the legal and social provisions of the Institution of Marriage. Here's a list of some of the issues that are at stake.

1. Medical science has documented that marriage enhances the couple's physical well-being, their psychological well-being, and their financial well-being.
2. Two of the main issues which unigender couples are legally denied concern inheritance rights and hospital visitation rights.
3. The lack of marital legal protection also affects bankruptcy laws, employee benefits laws, estate tax laws, and immigration laws.
4. Prohibiting unigender marriages also stigmatizes our unigender citizens and invites public discrimination against them.
5. The denial of marriage equality contributes to the expansion of homophobia and to the continuation of homophobia.

## **Mankind's Natural Drive for Love and Affection**

Let's now reflect upon the relationship between a person's SO/SI and the human attributes of love, affection and emotions. Whether you're a bigender person or a unigender person, all sentient human beings experience the sensations of love, personal affections, and human emotions. Experiencing human emotions is a very critical element of the human experience, and emotions remain to be one of the greatest mysterious enigmas of life. And of course, there are negative emotions as well as positive emotions. All mentally and psychologically healthy persons experience loving emotions and personal affections for those they so dearly love. This love and affection is just as beautiful and wonderful for unigender persons as well as bigender persons. In other words, a unigender couple can have emotional and affectionate relationships that are just as loving and responsible as any bigender couple. Immoral and deviant sexual relationships and practices are functions of a person's intentional will and have nothing to do with a person's born SO/SI.

In my deepest reflections, I've come to know with assured confidence that the ostracizing and condemnation of America's unigender citizens is a flagrant inequity of the ideal creed of Democracy. Why should a person be emotionally, physically and socially mistreated simply because of a natural disposition which they were born with? And why would American Christians invoke the name of God from the ancient-ancient Old Testament to justify the mistreatment of this small percentage of good American citizens? Are we not "one Nation under God," and don't we truly believe "in God we trust?" In our Pledge of Allegiance don't we truly believe the democratic doctrine "and justice for all?" And don't forget America's great motto that's on every American coin and bill – "E Pluribus Unum." This Latin phrase means "One Out Of Many." Although we are many people of many nationalities, with multiple languages and multiple faiths, of many races and cultures, we become a unified People of one type of personhood – the Democracian. The Good Democracian is always faithful to the fair, reasonable and just treatment of all citizens. We hold tight to our breasts the deep and sacred meanings of The Law Of Equality and The Law Of Love. For this we know to be true: When some of the People hurt an isolated class of the People, then all the People are hurt. This is because we truly are one People with a common heart and soul that feels the pain and isolation of a class of the People that has been set aside. Thus they're made to be second class citizens without any fault of their own. If a nation has just one second class citizen, then the nation suffers.

A successful and truly loving marriage is founded upon a very mature form of love that exceeds all other forms of love. Such a marriage has a spiritual bond as well as a love bond. In this optimum marriage, the couple comingles their bodies and their souls when they express their sensuous love for one another. I call this the Platinum Love Relationship, and this is the type of relationship which creates a

stable, prosperous and ideal society. And once again, it doesn't matter if you're a bigender couple or a unigender couple. All couples have an equal opportunity to attain the Platinum Love Relationship. One more point should be made perfectly clear. Our gracious, benevolent and perfectly loving Creator loves all His children equally, and it doesn't matter if they're bigender persons or unigender persons. And didn't Jesus die on the cross for the sins of all unigender believers as well as all bigender believers? Furthermore, doesn't a unigender person have the ability to love their Creator with all their heart, with all their soul and with all their mind – all with the same capacity and enthusiasm as a bigender person? Finally, didn't Jesus teach us to love our neighbors as ourselves? I never heard or read a Bible scholar say this teaching of universal love excludes our unigender neighbors.

It's crystal clear to me that the denial of marital equality for America's unigender citizens is a broad and bold act of discrimination against these children of the Great Divinity of Democracy. Laws that prohibit unigender marriages are as discriminatory as the marriage laws that prohibited interracial marriages between African Americans and Caucasian Americans. Because all good Americans love the equality of Democracy and despise unjust discrimination, it's only a matter of time before all states of the Union pass laws that uphold and protect unigender marriages. Of course, this discrimination could end much sooner by the single action of the United States Supreme Court. Either way, this distressing injustice shall be rectified.

## **Jesus, Adultery and Homosexuality**

The issue regarding homosexuality involves one other very significant injustice – the injustice against the essence and nature of our Creator's love. Consider the ultra conservative Christian's perspective regarding the ultra sinful nature of homosexuality. For these Christians, homosexual relationships are terribly wicked sins, which Leviticus 20: 9 condemns and states the violators shall surely be put to death. Now consider this issue. Leviticus 20: 10 states that all adulterers and the adulteresses are also condemned to be put to death. Jesus never addresses homosexuality, but He does address adultery.

First, consider Luke 16: 18: *Everyone who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery. And he who marries one who is divorced from a husband commits adultery.*

Second, Jesus expands what constitutes adultery in Matthew 5: 27 and 28: *You have heard that it was said, you shall not commit adultery, but I say to you that everyone who **looks at a woman with lust** for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart.*

There are several Bible verses where Jesus harshly condemns adultery, but there are no verses where He condemns homosexuality. Whether this is significant or not is a matter of personal opinion. But you have to wonder, why don't traditional Christians rally around the issue of adultery like they do with the issue of homosexuality? Why don't Christians actively support Jesus in regards to His stern condemnation of adultery? Was He aware of Leviticus 20: 10? Surely, he was! Was Jesus in support of "putting to death" all adulterers and adulteresses? (The answer to this question can be found in John 8: 1 through 11.) But again I say, why don't Christians attack and condemn adulterers and adulteresses as eagerly and vigorously as they attack and condemn homosexuals? It's human nature to believe what one wants to believe and then disregard the rest. We all live by selective beliefs, but we should always strive to be consistent, loving, forgiving and merciful.

One last question for your consideration. Does God love those who are divorced more or less than He loves those who are homosexuals? But remember! Divorce is a decision of the intellect and an act of personal will. Therefore, the divorce person is directly responsible for their willful sin of adultery. On the other hand, homosexuality is a natural occurrence which a person can neither choose nor reject. True homosexuality is not an act of personal will. For me personally, I believe the Lord of Love loves both the divorce person and the homosexual person, and He loves them both as equally as He loves all His Children of Humanity. Therefore, we should all love one another just as much as our gracious and benevolent Creator loves each of His children. Love your neighbor as yourself!

It's very important the reader fully understands the deeper issue at hand. Unigender persons are naturally born as homosexual sentient human beings. They have no control, power, sway or responsibility in regards to being born as homosexual persons. Is this our Creator's intentional will that homosexual persons are born, or is it our Creator's permissive will that homosexual persons are born? Either way, our Creator is responsible for the creation of a unigender person. He is either directly involved (thus exercising His intentional will), or He is indirectly involved (thus allowing that which is not His intentional will but is His permissive will). Nevertheless, our gracious Creator's ultimate will shall prevail in His chosen time. Remember, love shall always prevail.

So then, let us realize what is actually occurring when you apply the belief that homosexual people should not be married. First of all, this is a very unfair treatment of our fellow Americans who happen to be born with a unigender SO/SI. Second, these unfair actions in effect deny our Creator's love for His unigender children. Third, this unfair action classifies our gay citizens as second class citizens, and thus are unequal to America's first class citizens. Finally, make sure it's clear in your mind what the ultimate condition is being forged by the unfair

treatment of our unigender neighbors. (1) By our Creator's will, He first creates homosexual persons. (2) Then for being homosexual persons, our gracious Creator condemns them and sentences them to death.

Now, does this sound fair, reasonable and just? Does this sound like an exercise of God's love; that is, God's perfect love? Truly and surely, this is not an act of love; but instead, this is an act of extremely vicious antilove that's as evil as practicing the sacrifice of new born babies. This is especially true for unigender persons who truly love God with all their heart, and with all their soul, and with all their mind. God is our Creator, and He is not our Destructor. Our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator would never do anything that's unloving and unjust to His precious Children of Humanity. God and Love are inseparable, and our Creator could never do anything that's maliciously evil.

## **A Personal Message to Our Unigender Citizens**

Life is full of mysteries and challenges, and those who are born with a physical, emotional, sexual, spiritual or social disadvantage face many additional trials and tribulations of life. But whether you're born with an inherent life-advantage or an inherent life-disadvantage, one fact remains true and certain. As individuals, we must remain true to the devotion, the dedication, and the commitment to the pursuit of the Cosmic Truth and the diligent and consistent exercise of Cosmic Love. For here is a great secret of Cosmic Life. Each and every Child of Humanity is born with a personal intrinsic cosmic value which makes them one of the most admired sentient creatures in our Creator's Cosmos. And this is especially true of our loving Creator's unigender children, for they bear a burden that's beyond the normal burdens of our Creator's bigender children. Hopefully in time this shall change.

By being devoted, dedicated and committed to the Cosmic Truth and Cosmic Love, you personally choose the path of Godly goodness and Godly righteousness. Embrace this great truth and shake off all sensations of inferiority, uncertainty, disability and unworthiness. You are a child of the Great Divinity of Democracy, and that in itself is the foundation of your personal self-worth, self-value, self-esteem, and your Natural and Inalienable Right to true and deep-seated happiness. Rejoice and be happy, for your gracious Creator truly, sincerely and genuinely loves you. And lastly, learn these two great lessons (Matthew 5: 6 through 10) from the life and teachings of Jesus, the Lord of Love.

*Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied. Blessed are the merciful, for they shall receive mercy. Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God. Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God. And blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.*

## **4.8 Christianity's Second Reformation**

I call Christianity's Second Reformation the Silent, Passive and Patient Reformation. The First Reformation operated like a microwave oven. It operated with high energy and intensity with fast detrimental results. At this time in mankind's history, the differences in personal, subjective Christian beliefs were resolved on a battle field. Both warring opponents had the same mindset: "Believe as I believe about God and Jesus, or you'll force me to annihilate you and all others who believe the same lies you believe. You are an abomination to God and Jesus." On the other hand, the Second Reformation operates like a crock pot. It operates with very low energy and it calmly takes its time to peacefully accomplish its mission. This Reformation never forces its beliefs upon others but advocates the fundamental principles of the Freedom of Religion. The exercise of the Freedom of Religion is also actively practiced within one's own local church. Most of mainstream Christianity represents a progressive Church. A progressive Church has an open mind and an open heart, thus being extremely sensitive and tolerant to the personal beliefs of their fellow Christians. In my reflections, I can only perceive one tenet of belief that really matters to today's modern, progressive Christian. "Is Jesus divine, and do you rely on His love, His life and His teachings?"

### **The Living Reality of Jesus Christ**

Every person on planet earth should seriously and reflectively consider the question: "Who is this man whom history calls Jesus Christ?" From a pure secular perspective His name is Jesus of Nazareth. The word "Christ" is the ancient Greek word for the Hebrew word "Messiah," which is actually a title. Messiah literally means "the anointed one," and it refers to the Jewish kings. It was believed that a true king was selected by God and was an instrument of God to be used for the benefit of the people. When a king was selected he was then anointed with oil and perfumes in an ordination ceremony. Christian European kings followed this same ordination ceremony, and therefore defined themselves to be selected and ordained by God. This was a very powerful message to the King's very superstitious

subjects. Literally speaking, Jesus could be called “Jesus the Messiah” or “Jesus the King.” That’s why He’s called the King of Kings, and it’s also why the Romans executed Him. Rome already had a king – the Cesar – and Cesar didn’t allow any competition. The Hebrews also had a very strong belief about a special messiah. This messiah had long been prophesied by the great prophets, whereby this messiah would have super powers that would free the Jewish nation from the injustices of the Roman empire. Of course Christians believe Jesus is the prophesied super messiah. All other earthly religion adamantly reject this belief. Whatever you believe, this much we know for sure about Jesus. Even from a secular perspective of life, Jesus has become the most influential person in the history of planet earth. His life was incredibly simple, and yet He never pursued power, wealth or fame. He is an eternal spiritual Messiah and not a temporal earthly messiah. The best synopsis of His life is titled “One Solitary Life.” The author is unknown. I first read it on a Christmas card someone gave my wife and me.

## **One Solitary Life**

*Nearly two thousand years ago in an obscure village, a child was born of a peasant woman. He grew up in another village where He worked as a carpenter until He was thirty. Then for three years He became an itinerant preacher.*

*This man never went to college or seminary. He never wrote a book. He never held a public office. He never had a family nor owned a home. He never put His foot inside a big city nor traveled even 200 miles from His birthplace. And though He never did any of the things that usually accompany greatness, throngs of people followed Him. He had no credentials but Himself.*

*While He was still young, the tide of public opinion turned against Him. His followers ran away. He was turned over to His enemies and sentenced to death on a cross between two thieves. While He was dying, His executioners gambled for the only piece of property He had on earth – the simple coat He had worn. His body was laid in a borrowed grave provided by a compassionate friend.*

*But three days later this Man arose from the dead – living proof that He was, as He had claimed, the Savior whom God had sent, the Incarnate Son of God.*

*Nineteen centuries have come and gone and today the risen Lord Jesus Christ is the central figure of the human race. On our*

*calendars His birth divides history into two eras. One day of every week is set aside in remembrance of Him. And our two most important holidays celebrate His birth and resurrection. On church steeples around the world, His cross has become the symbol of victory over sin and death.*

*This one Man's life has furnished the theme for more songs, books, poems and paintings than any other person or event in history. Thousands of colleges, hospitals, orphanages and other institutions have been founded in honor of this One who gave His life for us.*

*All the armies that ever marched, all the navies that ever sailed, all the governments that ever sat, all the kings that ever reigned have not changed the course of history as much as this One Solitary Life.*

## **Who Is This Man the World Calls Jesus?**

Here are three of the most important questions of life. (1) Do you believe Jesus is the Incarnate Son of God? (2) Did our Creator really send His Son to earth as a sentient human being? And (3) Was Jesus' mission to teach mankind: (a) about the living reality of His heavenly Father, (b) about His Father's infinite love and concern for His earthly children, and (c) about His Father's Kingdom of Love; that is, the world-to-come for those who truly, sincerely and genuinely love their Creator?

If the recorded life and teachings of Jesus are founded upon the Cosmic Truth, then this is a very serious matter that should be investigated by every person who has a true concern for their own well-being and the well-being of those they sincerely love. You don't want to meet your loving Creator if you haven't first sincerely tried to learn all you can about Him. There are only four gospels in the Bible that tell the story of Jesus. Furthermore, three of the gospels are very similar, thus being called the synoptic gospels – Matthew, Mark and Luke. The fourth gospel is the Gospel of John, and it's significantly different from the synoptic gospels. The average length of the gospels is only 35 pages. It's a very simple and short task to read the gospels, and the vast majority of people who read them find the life and teachings of Jesus to be very inspiring and uplifting. Now, why is that, and would like to uncover the truth? What do you have to lose if you took the time to read these four, simple-to-understand gospels?

The story of Jesus is a story of miracles. There are stories about Jesus: (1) healing the sick and paralyzed, (2) reviving the dead including one man who had been dead for three days, (3) casting out demons, (4) walking on water, (5) giving sight to an old blind man who was born blind, (6) feeding the multitudes with a few

pieces of fish and break, (7) climbing to the top of a mountain with three of His disciples where He then starts shining like light that emanates from within His body – and then being joined by two other people who were also shining like Jesus, (8) being resurrected after being crucified, and (9) many other amazing stories that naturally create sincere doubt in a sensible and rational mind. Do supernatural events really happen, and how can you be reasonably confident such miracles really do happen? Would you like to experience a miracle, or at least witness a miracle? Lastly, I should note that the vast teachings of Jesus are about love, its joy, its power, its mercy, and its forgiveness. You may reasonably cast your doubts about the miracles of Jesus, but His teachings about love shall surely enlighten you. This is even true from a secular perspective.

## **Why I Believe in the Living Reality of God and the Divinity of Jesus**

Why would anyone with a rational, sensible and logical mind believe the recorded life and teachings of Jesus are true? It should be noted that many very intelligent men and women with very rational, sensible and logical minds believe these stories are true. And each of these intelligent, rational persons could tell you why they believe in the stories of Jesus. I will humbly and gladly share the four main reasons why I believe in the living reality of God and the divinity of Jesus.

### **Reason #1** **The Mind's Faculty of Spiritual Intuition**

I have used the phrase “spiritual intuition” many times in this book, and I address spiritual intuition in Section 3.1 titled “You Are a Sentient Human Being.” There’s also of specific interest a subsection titled “Sentient Senses and ESP.” It’s a common theme in all religions that sentient human beings have the ability to sense mankind’s spiritual nature. This includes the ability to sense God is real and alive in the lives of His Children of Humanity. From the Christian’s Old Testament, this ability is defined in Psalm 46:10 – ***Be still and know that I am God.*** This is an exhortation for human beings to pray and meditate. I heard several times that prayer is when you commune with God, and mediation is when God communes with you. Jesus also addresses the issue of praying and meditating in the Gospel of Luke. At the beginning of chapter 11, one of the disciples ask Jesus to teach them how to properly pray. Jesus then gives them the Lord’s Prayer. Then in verse 9 (Luke 11: 9) Jesus states: ***And I say to you, ask and it shall be given to you. Seek and you shall find. Knock and it shall be opened to you.***”

There are billions of people scattered across the world, and who come from every religion of the earth, and they will adamantly and confidently affirm their belief in the living reality of mankind's Creator. The sensations of your spiritual intuition may be as gentle as a mosquito on your arm. But if you clear your mind of all the worldly distractions that surround you, then you shall surely sense with great confidence that there's a mosquito on your arm.

## **Reason #2**

### **The Three Kinds of Personal Spiritual Experiences (PSE's)**

**PSE of the First Kind (Designated as "PSE1"):** A PSE1 can be realized simply by praying or meditating. You realize this PSE from the good and positive feelings you obtain when you pray or meditate with a sincere desire to draw close to your Creator. I should also note that in this type of meditation the person meditating initiates an open channel to God so that He can commune with you. This is a low power form of communing.

**PSE of the Second Kind (Designated as "PSE2"):** What happens when our Creator initiates an open channel to His earthly child? This is a PSE of the Second Kind, and it's a high power form of communing. When God calls your soul's telephone number, you know it with amazing confidence and assurance that He has just communicated with you. The initial emotional sensations are phenomenal, but they always dissipate. Nevertheless, this most remarkable experience remains with you even decades later. I consider myself most fortunate to have had three PSE's of the Second Kind.

**PSE of the Third Kind (Designated as "PSE3"):** A PSE3 involves a direct encounter with a spiritual entity that visually appears to the individual and directly talks with the person. The talking may not be verbal audio communications but may be some other form of sensory perception. People who experienced Jesus' miraculous powers know what a PSE of the Third Kind is. The apostle Paul on the road to Damascus had a PSE of the Third Kind with Jesus. Bill Wilson, cofounder of Alcoholics Anonymous (AA), had a PSE of the Third Kind that immediately and miraculously cured him of alcoholism. Bill Wilson was also a patient of the world renowned psychiatrist Carl Jung. In Jung's correspondence with Wilson, Jung informed Wilson about his own PSE of the third kind. Jung had a near death out-of-body experience of his own. In his experience, Jung found himself floating in space and looking down upon earth from a far distance. The reader can learn more by visiting AA's website at [www.aa.org](http://www.aa.org). Many, many people who experienced the clinical death phenomenon had PSE's of the Third Kind. Dr. Raymond Moody is a forerunner in the investigations of the clinical death phenomenon. Dr. Moody is a medical doctor but also has a PhD's in psychology and philosophy. He also has the best selling books about the clinical death phenomenon. His website is

[www.LifeAfterLife.com](http://www.LifeAfterLife.com). The website offers both books and DVD's. Many, many people embrace his work as being so uplifting that it removes the sting of death. Also, there's a nonprofit organization called the International Association For Near-Death Studies (IANDS), and it has significantly expanded Dr. Moody's work. Its website address is [iands.org/home.html](http://iands.org/home.html). It's highly recommended the reader peruse both of these websites.

### **Reason #3**

#### **My three PSE's of the Second Kind (PSE2)**

**My First PSE2:** My first PSE2 occurred when my first child was born. My daughter was born on Mother's Day, but my wife said it was Labor Day. The baby was in a breach position, and we were warned this position often results in a Caesarean section. After many hours of labor, my wife became too exhausted and the Caesarean operation immediately followed. Mother and child were defined as doing very well. My mother-in-law and I were taken to the delivery nursery room where my daughter was in a plastic cradle with very bright heat lamps. I looked at the baby and I was shocked. I told my mother-in-law they were showing us the wrong baby. It was very obvious to me this was an African American baby because her hair that was crinkled, matted, and extremely black. In addition, the baby had a very dark skin tone, and the bottoms of her feet were black. My mother-in-law said no, this is not an African American child. This is your baby. First of all, her feet are black from the ink use to stamp the birth certificate. Second, her hair and body are blackish because she hadn't been washed from the birth operation, which involved a lot of blood and birth fluids. The heat lamps then dried the liquids and thus layered her skin and hair. Needless to say, the whole experience was very alarming and totally unexpected. The hospital staff told us to go home, get some rest, and then come back at 6:00 PM.

I got some needed rest and became refreshed and eager to see my precious daughter. I arrived at the hospital early and went directly to the nursery. I was alone in front of the nursery's observation window, quietly admiring my daughter's grandeur and beauty. Objectively speaking, she was really, really beautiful. This is a common occurrence with Caesarean section babies because the baby doesn't go through the birth canal. I can't begin to describe the deep, internal love I was experiencing for her, and I was thinking: *"What did she ever do to deserve this incredible love I feel for her? Absolutely nothing, and yet I love her so very, very much!"* Then I perceived this spiritual, mental sensation that somehow I knew was a communication from God: ***"This is exactly how I feel about all My children."*** I sensed an emphasis upon the word "**all**."

This mental, spiritual sensation wasn't anything like a voice or even a thought. I can only describe it as a "mental, spiritual communication" or as a "mental, spiritual impression." It's also like viewing a beautiful painting that's immersed in multiple elements that require hundreds of thousands of words to describe verbally. In addition, I'm also very confident of this point. When God communes with you, you know with a highly immense confidence that God truly is communing with you.

Now, I knew perfectly well I was physically alone, but I still looked all around the room to make sure no physical person was actually speaking to me. I was also befuddled by the fact that I wasn't startled by the experience. But in a very bizarre manner, I also sensed why I wasn't startled. Before I perceived God's communication, there was a mystical sensation, or more like a flash of insight, which announced God's forth coming communion: "Do not be afraid. This is your Heavenly Creator." I believe this flash of insight is the basis for my immense confidence in my belief that this truly was a communion with God. After many moments of reflections I've come to believe this spiritual communion with God is an effect of the in-dwelling of the Holy Spirit.

**My Second PSE2:** My second PSE2 began with a news report I heard on a local Christian radio station. I was by myself in the thick of the morning traffic rush hour, and I was moving at a turtle's pace. This allowed me to be more attentive to the news reports. There was a Baptist hospital in Atlanta in which 500 (+/-) aborted fetuses were mistakenly picked up by a garbage truck and then taken to the municipal dump. A public outcry caused the fetus' to be retrieved from the dump and the customary disposal method utilized. There was no description of what this customary disposal method was. In a knee jerk reaction I started saying very loudly "God daamm - - -!!!" But somehow I terminated the completion of the expression. I started feeling a most unusual embarrassment, and somehow I automatically revised by acclamation to "God - - - bless America!!!" I was shocked and deeply angry at the event. I thought to myself: "Is this what America has degraded itself to be? Whatever happened to the "sacredness of human life," and especially to the unprotected life of an unborn child?" It took several days to stop dwelling upon the event.

A week or two passed and I was by myself on the way home from work. Once again I was in the thick of the traffic rush hour. Now, I hadn't thought about the devastating news report in a few days. Then out of the blue I had my second PSE of the second kind. This PSE involved a very simple and single impression that communicated a simple question: "***Do you really want to know how I feel about this event?***"

I wasn't aware that I made a decision that answered the question, but it didn't matter. I was now in the midst of an emotional experience that is truly ineffable. The experience was solely about "pure grief." My father died when I was ten years old. Thus, I know what true grief really is. But the grief I was now experiencing was light years beyond my childhood experience. I immediately started sobbing beyond physical control. I was sobbing so bad that my body was actually having convulsions. I couldn't keep driving safely, and I started fearing I was going to have an accident. I was on the interstate and somehow got off at the next exit. I then quickly pulled off the road. I kept shaking and sobbing without any ability to stop. What a sight that must have been to passer-bys!

I then had a second spiritual impression: "***My children perish because of a lack of knowledge.***" Somehow I knew this "lack of knowledge" was all about the "knowledge of love." Most fortunate for me the episode ended as quickly as it began. I was emotionally drained and all I wanted to do was get home to the love and comfort of my family. Lastly and as a point for personal reflections, in this second impression, are the "children that perish" the unborn children or the women who had the abortions? Could it be both? Whatever the answer may be, this we know for sure. Our gracious Creator's love is perfect, and it shall always prevail because it's constantly planting the seeds of Hope.

**My Third PSE2:** I was living in Chesapeake, Virginia which is located in the southeast corner of Virginia. I was self-employed as a consulting electrical engineer. One of my good clients was Rubbermaid, specifically a manufacturing plant located in Winchester, Virginia. Winchester is located in the northern peak of Virginia. Another good client was a naval ammunition facility located in Indian Head, Maryland. For this work I was actually a subcontractor to another engineering firm. The facility is located close to Waldorf, Maryland. On one occasion during a very cold February I had meetings and field work arranged at the Rubbermaid plant. The next day I had meetings and field work arranged at the Indian Head facility. The required work for each facility exceeded eight hours, so I knew I was going to have two very long days back-to-back.

When I left Winchester the rest of the world was already eating dinner. I stopped at Manassas, Virginia for dinner. There was a nice Chinese restaurant that I liked, and it had a very tasty meal that included a lobster sauce with large jumbo shrimp. However, the meal had a specific flavor which I learned later was iodine. The iodine was actually in the shrimp. I had eaten shrimp with this flavor several times in the past, and I never had a problem with it except for the last time I ate some steam shrimp. I had a minor reaction with small, itchy welts breaking out on my abdomen. This minor incident never even entered my mind during this event.

After dinner I drove to a hotel in Waldorf, Maryland. Upon arriving I met Mike who was my client's representative. We made plans for meeting in the morning and we then retired for the evening. By this time I began having minor itching on my abdomen, and I immediately starting thinking bed mites. I previously had a very aggravating experience with bed mites in a hotel in Puerto Rico. I called my wife to let her know I was in the hotel room and ready for bed. I told her about the itching I was experiencing and that it was just like the Puerto Rican bed mites experience. She became very upset and demanded I take a Benadryl tablet before I go to sleep. I said to myself: "Oh Brother! What a worry wart!" I promised her I would take the tablet, and I did. Besides, I knew the pill would make me sleep like a log. The basic ingredient in Benadryl and most over the counter sleeping pills is diphenhydramine. Benadryl is a brand name.

I was sleeping very deeply, but I was awoken by a sharp pain in my left hand. I later learned the time was about 2:00 AM, give or take 15 minutes. I was very, very groggy because of the diphenhydramine, and I immediately wondered to myself: "What the hell is going on!" I was still lying in the bed, and then it happened – a spiritual communication from the world to come: "**Larry! It's the shrimp. Get to the hospital immediately.**" I responded by saying: "Yeah! It's the shrimp!" I struggled out of bed and made it to the bathroom mirror. I couldn't really see. Based upon many previous occurrences, I thought I had a large build up of a liquid substance from my eyes which can "cake up" my eyes and prevent me from opening them. By cupping my hands I washed my eyes with water. Usually the water dissolves the crusty build up, and I can then open my eyes and see once again. But this time it didn't work. In response, I looked very closely in the mirror, putting my nose just an inch or two away from the mirror. That's when I realized what had happened. My entire face and body were immensely swollen like someone had pumped me up like a balloon. The swelling of my eyes were very bad, being so swollen that my field of vision was only one to two inches vertically. Then the pain from my left hand regained my attention. I brought it right up to my eyes. That was the only way I could see my hand. My hand was so swollen that my wedding ring was nothing but a very fine gold thread. The ring was literally cutting into my finger, but it wasn't bleeding.

The swelling of my face, hands and entire body is no exaggeration. There's a comedy movie titled "Pure Luck," starring Martin Short and Danny Glover. In the movie, the Martin Short character is stung by a bee. This character just happens to be highly allergic to bee stings. He too blows up like a balloon. The only thing that's not realistic in the movie is that Martin Short's eyes don't swell up. The internet actually has photographs of Martin Short's character while he's swollen up like a blimp.

Somehow I had to get to an emergency room. I struggled trying to decide whether to go to the hospital by myself or get Mike's help. Very fortunately for me, I decided to get Mike's help. When he first saw me in my swollen condition, he did a double take and was obviously repelled by my appearance. We rushed to the night clerk at the hotel's front desk and he gave us directions to get to the hospital. Mike and I went directly to his car, and then things got much worse. I went into physical shock as soon as I hit the very cold winter air. I also needed Mike's help just to get me in the car. I had the coldest sensation I ever experienced in my whole life, and my entire body was convulsing violently out of control.

We finally arrived at the hospital's emergency room. The ER staff looked at me and instantly went into a medical emergency mode. They wheeled me to a hospital bed, hooked up all kinds of wires, tubes and a gadget or two. Then a nurse delivered this huge transparent bag of liquid. They told me it was a high concentration of liquid Benadryl. Before this first bag was empty the nurse brought a second bag of equal quantity. I guess my bladder was as swollen as the rest of me, and thus, it could handle the second bag. As soon as that bag was empty I started getting out of the bed. The doctor physically pushed me back into the bed and said I wasn't yet ready to leave. The process had to be completed in order to ensure I was going to be healed and capable of discharge. The nurse then appeared carrying a third and equal volume of Benadryl. I was immensely grateful that three bags of Benadryl would cure this patient. I should also note that the only thing that was longer than this night was the next day. After the meetings and the field work at the Indian Head Naval Facility, I eventually returned home around 6:00 PM. I was sound asleep by 6:15 PM and didn't wake up until very late the next morning. I believe I was counting my blessings instead of my sheep.

Lastly, I would like to address two additional elements regarding this entire experience. Did you notice how the spiritual communication began? It began with my name being called out. I can sense that two features occurred as soon as my name was called out. The first feature is that I was awoken just enough to get me out of the deep sleep I was in. The second feature is that I truly sensed a significant connection to the entity that had called upon me. With this spiritual communication I sensed I was accepted by this entity just as I am, and that I belonged **with** this great and loving entity. Somehow I sensed His house was also my house, and I will dwell in His house once I complete my earthly training and spiritual orientation. I know there's no place like home, for your true home is where you're welcomed and made to feel comfortable. The best is yet to come. Therefore, don't fear the reaper!

Finally, the second element that I have often dwelled upon was my wife's warning to take a Benadryl tablet before going to bed. Was that one pill sufficient to keep my throat from swelling so much that it would close my air passage, thus resulting in my death by suffocation? Alas, I find myself with a natural life condition that I call a GMOL; that is, a Great Mystery of Life. I look forward with

great anticipation knowing that many of my GMOL's will be revealed when I enter our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator's Kingdom of Love. Love as though your eternal life depends upon it. Because it does!!!

#### **Reason #4**

### **The Ultimate Sacrifice of the First Christians**

What do you believe that's worth dying for? Consider this hyper theoretical condition. Earth is invaded by menacing aliens who quickly conquer all the earth because of their superior knowledge, weapons and their will to annihilate the highly inferior humans. The aliens define humans are less than cosmic maggots, and their only value is to be menial slaves. Earthlings respond by affirming they are sentient human beings who have established successful space explorations, especially including several visits to the moon. The aliens immediately respond that human claim is not true, and that the American earthlings only fabricated these stories in a Hollywood sound stage. They then issue an edict that any humans who say mankind has visited the moon shall be immediately executed without any other recourse.

Now, would you appease the aliens by denying Americans walked on the moon, or would you sacrifice yourself by affirming Americans had walked on the moon several times? Would your willingness to die for the truth reinforce your testimony of these convictions of your heart? This is exactly what the very first Jewish Christians did when the ruling Jews persecuted and executed the Christian Jews who professed Jesus was the Jewish Messiah. People do not sacrifice themselves just to perpetuate a lie. This is especially true when the truths they embrace and testify to are so far beyond the ordinary occurrences of life. After all, raising the dead doesn't happen. Giving sight to the blind doesn't happen. Feeding 10,000 people from a few pieces of fish and bread doesn't happen. Being resurrected doesn't happen.

So then, why were these first Christians so willing to die in support for these events that don't happen? It's because they saw and witnessed these unbelievable events that really did happen. And if the person who performed these miracles is a Supreme Being with magnificent creative powers, then the events all of a sudden become reasonable, sensible, rational, logical and within the realm of the spiritual world. The witness of these first Christians and the faithful Christians that quickly followed are powerful and vibrant testimonies that are worthy of mankind's considerations and reflections. Under the power of these testimonies, I willingly embrace the belief that these supernatural events actually occurred, and I shall continue to believe in the reality of these events until proven otherwise. Many nonbelievers call me a fool. Nevertheless, my power of spiritual intuition informs me the recorded information about the life and teachings of Jesus are profoundly true. I gladly hitch my wagon to the star of Jesus until Jesus tells me there's a

better star to follow. Even then, I shall not abandon the Creative Being that so faithfully served my birth planet. I look forward with great anticipation to my entrance into the heavenly world-to-come; that is, the Kingdom of Love.

## **Spiritual Discontentment Forges Religious Reformations**

The history of mankind is a longtime series of gradual changes, evolutions, reformations and growth. This applies to individuals, societies, institutions, organizations, nations, governments and the entire world. And this process is the effects of the majority rule of the People. History has constantly taught mankind that the benevolent will of the People is always ultimately achieved. Mankind has always been driven to take its best and make it better. This is the case of Christianity's First Reformation – at least as perceived by the Protestant Church. The Catholic Church still disagrees with the Protestant Christians, and yet both parties call each other Christians. The decrease of religious fanaticism, the active desire for peaceful coexistence, and the will to love as Jesus teaches (love your enemy and pray for him) has reconciled the two warring parties. While I have not researched the history of Christian harmony with the Eastern Orthodox Christian Church, the story of reconciliation is probably similar. And of course there are always extreme fanatics who loudly declare their Christian beliefs, doctrines and dogmas provide the only true path to God. Anyone who doesn't believe as they do shall surely burn in hell for all eternity. Naturally, this type of ultra religious mindset provides the genesis for a religious reformation.

The First Christian Reformation centered upon the Biblical doctrine of salvation. The Catholic doctrine of salvation included the enhancement of salvation by the practice of additional good works, additional acts of charity, purgatorial atonement, and the selling of indulgences. The Catholic Church agrees with the Biblical doctrine of justification by faith, but they also believe the Christian life can be enhanced by exercising additional loving practices. Also, purgatory provides a safety net for those Christians who were not bad enough for hell but were not good enough for heaven. I'm sure many Catholic Christians find relief and sanctuary in this belief system. On the other hand, the Reformation Christians adamantly believed these Catholic enhancements were false teachings that corrupted the teachings of Jesus and His apostles. For the Protestant Christians, salvation is only attained by the believer's faith in Jesus as the incarnated Son of the Heavenly Father, and that only through Jesus is a sinner reconciled and accepted by the Heavenly Father. Jesus is the sinner's advocate before His Holy Father. Now, let this fact be crystal clear. The Christian doctrine of justification by faith, which is also associated with the Christian doctrine of **substitutionary atonement**, is emphatically defined in the Bible's New Testament, and it's addressed many times by Jesus and His apostles.

For Protestants, the practices of good works and acts of charity are like bribes to God, thus buying entrance into heaven. Furthermore, the Protestant believes acts of good works and charity are a natural result of loving God and your sentient brothers and sisters. As Jesus taught, a good tree cannot produce bad fruit, and a bad tree cannot produce good fruit, and you shall be known by the fruits of your Christian labors. In addition, spiritual activation by the Holy Spirit – that is, the indwelling of the Holy Spirit – produces **the Fruits of the Spirit**, these being love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness and self control (Galatians 5: 22). Accordingly, only true believers in Jesus as the Son of God will enter heaven. Members of other earthly religions will not enter heaven. Catholics who believe good works, acts of charity and purgatorial atonement help attain salvation will not enter heaven.

Of course, this Protestant belief of salvation means less than twenty percent of the world's population will enter heaven. Could our gracious Creator's reconcilable love really be that ineffective in reaching the hearts and souls of His Children of Humanity? It seems to me this belief system of salvation is really insulting to our perfectly loving Creator. On the other hand, there are many Christians who agree with my personal perspective that true, sincere and genuine love provides a direct path to our gracious and benevolent Creator. Herein lies the impetus for the beginning of Christianity's Second Reformation. Can a person be spiritually saved by the justification by love as well as the justification by faith? And what is greater – the justification by love or the justification by faith? When you reflect upon this question, remember apostle Paul's teaching from First Corinthians 13: 13 – "**But know abide faith, hope, and love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.**" Now, let this fact be crystal clear. The Christian doctrine of justification by love is emphatically defined in the Bible's New Testament, and it's addressed many, many times by Jesus and His apostles. There are two questions to consider. First, how is the doctrine of justification by faith compatible with the doctrine of justification by love? And second, can spiritual salvation be attained by the true, sincere and genuine love of mankind's gracious and benevolent Creator?

I've addressed these two questions with various people through the years. As a result, I've been astounded by the number of people who state they believe the power and essence of love is far greater than the power and essence of faith. Furthermore, there's a strong sentiment that our Creator would never send a person to hell or oblivion provided that person truly loves Him. Furthermore, the love of God readily becomes translated to the love of one's fellow sentient human beings; that is, the love of neighbor. Recall that Jesus taught mankind is to love his neighbor as himself. Also, recall this commandment is included in the Old Testament – Leviticus 19: 18. I've also reflected upon a statement that I either read or was told: "**faith justifies but love sanctifies.**" The word "**sanctify**" has many meanings: (1) to make holy; set apart as sacred; consecrate; (2) to purify or free

from sin; (3) to entitle to reverence and respect; and (4) to make productive of or conducive to spiritual blessing. For comparison purposes, the word “**justify**” means: (1) to show to be just; (2) to defend or uphold as blameless, just, or right; and (3) declare guiltless; absolve; acquit. I would like to be justified, but I would far more like to be sanctified.

I've seriously reflected upon these personal experiences, and I've come to one amazing conclusion. Everyday Christians have minds of their own, and they believe as they choose to believe. Note that the Freedom of Religion even applies within an individual religion. These spiritually based people also silently disagree with some primary Christian doctrine – especially a rigid, inflexible and intolerant doctrine of spiritual salvation. More and more Christians are believing there many paths to mankind's Creator, and no single religion has a monopoly on the access to Him and His Kingdom of Love. Love in its power and its glory is the greatest thing in regards to the bustle of daily physical life and ones inner spiritual life. Therefore, they seek to emulate to the best of their ability the love of Jesus and the love of our Heavenly Father. In other words, faith is very important, but the art of love is far more important. Accordingly, Christianity is the Religion of Love. Perhaps the greatest faith is the faith that's built upon God's Foundation of Love. For me personally, I've come to this final conclusion. **Ultimately, love isn't everything. It's the only thing!**

## **4.9 The Gospel of Love**

---

The word “**gospel**” literally means “good news.” There is no better “good news” in the Bible's New Testament than the many teachings of the fundamental principles of love. These “love-teachings” are scattered throughout the New Testament. Using available Bible aids, I found several love-teachings relevant to the topic at hand. **This book contains a limited search, but an extensive search was used in the author's book titled “The Gospel Of Love”** (available from Amazon's subsidiary CreateSpace, hyperlink [wwwcreatespace.com/4374168](http://wwwcreatespace.com/4374168)). By extracting these love-teachings from the New Testament, you can assemble and organize them in a natural and coherent manner. Together they form a compilation of the Gospel of Love. It's my hope the reader will seriously reflect upon the Gospel of Love and then apply these fundamental love principles in his or hers daily life. Choose to be an Advocate of Love, and you shall find a happiness and a joy that surpasses your expectations of life. And know this. The happiest people in life are those people who love with all their heart, and with all their soul, and with all their mind.

## **The Great Commandment – The Law of Love**

The Great Commandment to Love God and Neighbor is included in each of the three synoptic gospels: Matthew 22: 34 – 40; Mark 12: 28 – 34; and Luke 10: 25 – 29: This story about Jesus is told differently in each of these three gospels.

### **The Great Commandment From Matthew 22: 34 – 40**

*A group of Pharisees came to Jesus, and one of them – a lawyer – wanted to test Jesus by asking Him, “Teacher, which is the great commandment in the Law?” Jesus replied, “You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. **This is the great and foremost commandment.** The second is like it, you shall love your neighbor as yourself. **On these two commandments depend the whole Law and the Prophets.**”*

It’s not well known that Jesus was actually quoting passages from the Old Testament. The Great Commandment is first defined by Moses in his instructions to the Israelites. The story is described in Deuteronomy 6: 4 – 7.

*Hear, O Israel! The Lord is our God, the Lord is one! And you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your might. And these words, which I am commanding you today, shall be on your heart; and you shall teach them diligently to your sons and shall talk of them when you sit in your house and when you walk by the way and when you lie down and when you rise up.*

As previously discussed, the instruction to love your neighbor as yourself comes from Leviticus 19: 18: *You shall not take vengeance, nor bear any grudge against the sons of your people, but you shall love your neighbor as yourself.*

### **The Great Commandment From Mark 12: 28 – 34**

This story in the Gospel of Mark describes the Pharisee to be a scribe instead of a lawyer, and Jesus quote of the Great Commandment includes more of the verse from Deuteronomy.

*And one of the scribes came and heard them arguing, and recognizing that He had answered them well, asked Him, "What commandment is the foremost of all?" Jesus answered, "The foremost is, 'Hear, O Israel! The Lord our God is one Lord; and you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and with all your strength.' The second is this, 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.' There is no other commandment greater than these." And the scribe said to Him, "Right Teacher, You have truly stated that He is One, and there is no one else besides Him; and to love Him with all the heart and with all the understanding and with all the strength, and to love one's neighbor as himself, is much more than all burnt offerings and sacrifices." And when Jesus saw that he had answered intelligently, He said to him, "You are not far from the kingdom of God." And after that, no one would venture to ask Him and more questions.*

### **The Great Commandment From Luke 10: 25 – 29**

In Luke's story the lawyer asks Jesus, "*Teacher, what shall I do to inherit **eternal life?***" Jesus replies, "*What is written in the Law? How does it read to you?*" The lawyer then correctly quotes the passage to love God and neighbor. Jesus then says, "*You have answered correctly. **Do this and you will live.***" In response, the lawyer – wishing to justify himself – asks Jesus, "***And who is my neighbor?***" Jesus replies with the story of the Good Samaritan. The Good Samaritan story is recorded in Luke 10: 30 – 37. The vast majority of Christian scholars agree that Jesus is stating an allegorical story which means all our sentient brothers and sisters are our neighbors.

Personal Reflections: The vast majority of Biblical scholars agree that "your neighbor" is a universal realization that all of God's children are your neighbor. This realization in today's modern world is even more reinforced because we – that is, all the people of planet earth – are greatly blessed with mass rapid communications and mass rapid transportation. Science has greatly reduced the size of our planet; and thereby, science has also greatly enhanced the bond of universal love among all nations. Have you ever reflected upon the fact that space ship earth is just one great big neighborhood?

## **“Love Your Neighbor” as Addressed by Paul**

The Apostle Paul’s significantly exhorts the commandment to love your neighbor: In my biblical research I found three passages where the apostle Paul addresses the commandment to love your neighbor.

Roman 13: 8: *Owe nothing to anyone except to love one another; for **he who loves his neighbor has fulfilled the Law.***

Roman 13: 10: *Love does no wrong to a neighbor; **love therefore is the fulfillment of the Law.***

Galatians 5: 13, 14: *You were called to freedom, brethren; only do not turn your freedom into an opportunity for the flesh, but through love serve one another. **For the whole Law is fulfilled in one word, in the statement, you shall love your neighbor as yourself.***

### **The Young Rich Ruler**

#### **Matthew 19: 16 – 26; and Mark 10: 17 – 27**

The story of the young rich ruler is similar as described in Matthew and Mark. The following description is based upon Matthew’s story. A young man comes to Jesus and asks Him, “***What good thing shall I do that I may obtain eternal life?***” Jesus responds by saying, “*If you wish to enter into life, keep the commandments.*” Jesus then lists five of the ten commandments, and then He adds, “***And you shall love your neighbor as yourself.***” The young rich man responds, “*All these things I have kept. What am I still lacking?*” It appears his conscience was really bothering him. Jesus responds by saying, “*Go sell all of your possessions and give to the poor. Then come and follow Me.*” The young rich man was very grieved and he walked away because he was very rich. Jesus then said to His disciples, “*Truly I say to you, it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. And again I say to you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God.*” The disciples were astonished by what Jesus said and then asked, “***Then who can be saved?***” Jesus replied, “***With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.***”

Note: In this passage, the eye of a needle is not a sewing instrument. It’s a narrow gate which people and their animals must pass through in order to enter the city of Jerusalem. Camels – especially fully loaded camels – had a very difficult time passing through these narrow gates.

## **Love Your Enemies and Pray for Them** **Matthew 5: 43 – 46 and Luke 6: 27 – 28**

The exhortation to love your enemies and to pray for them is similar as described in Matthew and Luke. The following description is based upon Matthew's gospel, which includes a little more information than Luke's gospel. This exhortation is also part of Jesus' Sermon on the Mount. Jesus says, "*You have heard that it was said you shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy. But I say to you, **love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, in order that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven; for He causes His sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous; **for if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax-gatherers do the same?*****"

Personal Reflections: This story is actually an exhortation to love unconditionally. Also, remember the wiseman's teaching: "The best way to destroy your enemy is to love him, and thereby make him your friend."

## **The Renown Sinner Woman Who Loved Much** **Luke 7: 36 – 50:**

A devout Pharisee named Simon invited Jesus to his house for dinner. A renown sinner woman from the city heard about Jesus' visit to Simon's house. She then went to the house with a vial of perfume. She approached Jesus and starting weeping in a manner that her tears fell upon His feet. She then started wiping His feet with her hair. She also started kissing His feet and anointing them with her perfume. Simon responded by thinking, "*If this man were a prophet He would know who and what sort of person this woman is who is touching Him, that she is a sinner.*" Jesus knowing what Simon was thinking said to him, "*Simon, I have something to say to you. A certain money lender had two debtors: one owed five hundred denarii, and the other fifty. When they were unable to repay, he graciously forgave them both. Which of them therefore will love him more?*" Simon answered and said, "*I suppose the one whom he forgave more.*" Jesus responded, "*You have judged correctly.*" Jesus then turned toward the woman and said to Simon, "*Do you see this woman? I entered your house; you gave Me no water for My feet, but she has wet My feet with her tears; and wiped them with her hair. You gave me no kiss; but she, since the time I came in, has not ceased to kiss My feet. You did not anoint My head with oil, but she anointed My feet with perfume. **For this reason I say to you, her sins, which are many, have been forgiven, for she loved much; but he who is forgiven little, loves little.***" Then Jesus said to her, "Your sins have been forgiven. **Your faith has saved you. Go in peace.**"

Personal Reflections: Note how Jesus substitutes the attribute of love with the attribute of faith. This happens throughout the New Testament, and the same thing is done with the attribute of hope. This illustrates the interrelationship between hope, faith and love. As a result of my reflections, I have come to believe that hope, faith and love provide separate paths to an eternal relationship with Jesus and our Heavenly Father. The perfect love of our Creator attracts Him to every one of His children who has a desire to have a loving relationship with Him.

## **The Gospel According to John – The Apostle of Love**

In regards to the New Testament, no apostle wrote more about the importance of love than the apostle John. This includes his gospel writing and his letters. The gospel of John is also a very mystical book. Many people have difficulties reading and understanding the gospel of John, especially including myself. Just consider how John's gospel begins (John 1: 1 – 5).

*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things came into being by Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life, and the life was the light of men. And the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness did not comprehend it.*

The gospel of John also includes the most famous Bible verse known throughout the world. That verse is John 3: 16: *For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life.* This verse is believed by many Christians to be the very heart and soul of Christianity. The verse's associated topic begins with John 3: 16 and ends with John 3: 21. The topic is about spiritual salvation and the belief that only those who believe in Jesus as God's only begotten Son will be saved and be able to enter heaven for eternity with Jesus Christ and the Heavenly Father. Nevertheless, the gospel of John also includes messages about love that provide alternate concepts regarding spiritual salvation. Consider the following Bible verses from this most unusual gospel. Each of these verses is an instruction from Jesus to His disciples.

## **The Message of Love From the Gospel of John**

1. A New Commandment: John 13: 34 and 35: *A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another, even as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all men will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another.*
2. The Love Gift of the Helper: John 14: 15 – 17: *If you love Me, you will keep my commandments. And I will ask the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that He may be with you forever; that is the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it does not behold Him or know Him, but you know Him because He abides with you, and will be in you.*
3. Love's Infectious Nature: John 14: 21: *He who has My commandments and keeps them, he it is who loves Me; and **he who loves Me shall be loved by My Father**, and I will love him, and will disclose Myself to him.*
4. Love and the Heavenly Abode: John 14: 23: *If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him, and make Our abode with him.*
5. Love, Joy and the Greatest Love: John 15: 9 Through 14: *Just as the Father has loved Me, I have also loved you; abide in My love. If you keep My commandments, you will abide in My love; Just as I have kept My Father's commandments, and abide in His love. These things I have spoken to you, that My joy may be in you, and that your joy may be made full. **This is My commandment, that you love one another, just as I have loved you. Greater love has no one than this, that one lay down his life for his friends.***

## **The Message of Love From the First Letter of John**

Let us now consider the apostle John's first epistle; that is, his first letter. This is a relatively short letter, but it's highly packed with instructions about love. It amazes me how John can say so much with so little. In this letter John makes it very clear that we – the Children of Humanity – are literally His children, that His love is perfect, that His perfect love casts out all fears, and that because God first loved His earthly children, we too can also love. There is no writing in the Bible that's more meaningful, powerful and hopeful than the First Letter of John.

1. Love's Propitiation and Reconciliation: 1 John 2: 1 – 5: *My little children, I am writing these things to you that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous; and He Himself*

is the **propitiation** for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for those of the whole world. And by this we know that we have come to know Him, if we keep His commandments. The one who says, I have come to know Him, and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him; **but whoever keeps His word, in him the love of God has truly been perfected.** By this we know that we are in Him.

Personal Reflections: The word “**propitiation**” means: “the act of making favorably inclined, conciliatory or reconciled.” The word “**reconciled**” means: (1) to bring to acceptance; (2) to settle a dispute or quarrel; (3) to bring into agreement and harmony; and (4) to make compatible. Our gracious Creator’s perfect love abounds with mercy, which naturally leads to forgiveness, and then reconciles His imperfect child to a loving relationship.

2. Love’s Enlightenment: 1 John 2: 10 and 11: **The one who loves his brother abides in the light and there is no cause for stumbling in him.** But the one who hates his brother is in the darkness and walks in the darkness, and does not know where he is going because the darkness has blinded his eyes.
3. Love and the Children of God: 1 John 3: 1 and 2: See how great a love the Father has bestowed upon us, that we should be called children of God; and such we are. For this reason the world does not know us, because it did not know Him. Beloved, now we are children of God, and it has not appeared as yet what we shall be. We know that, when He appears, we shall be like Him, because we shall see Him just as He is.
4. Love and Righteousness: 1 John 3: 10 and 11: By this the children of God and the children of the devil are obvious; anyone who does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor the one who does not love his brother. **For this is the message which you have heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.**
5. Love, Eternal Life and Love’s Good Deeds: 1 John 3: 14 Through 18: We know that we have passed out of death into life, because we love the brethren. He who does not love abides in death. Everyone who hates his brother is a murderer; and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him. We know love by this, that He laid down His life for us; and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren. But whoever has the world’s goods, and beholds his brother in need and closes his heart against him, how does the love of God abide in him? **Little children, let us not love with word or with tongue, but in deed and truth.**

6. God Is Love: 1 John 4: 7 Through 13: ***Beloved, let us love one another, for love is from God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God. The one who does not love does not know God, for God is love. By this the love of God was manifested in us, that God has sent His only begotten Son into the world so that we might live through Him. In this is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins. **Beloved, if God so loved us, we also ought to love one another.** No one has beheld God at any time; if we love one another, God abides in us, and His love is perfected in us. **By this we now that we abide in Him and He in us, because He has given us of His Spirit.*****
7. God's Love Is Perfect and Casts Out All Fear: 1 John 4: 18 Through 21: ***There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear involves punishment, and the one who fears is not perfected in love. We love because He first loved us. If someone says, 'I love God,' and hates his brother, he is a liar; for the one who does not love his brother whom he has seen, cannot love God whom he has not seen. **And this commandment we have from Him, that the one who loves God should love his brother also.*****

### **The Message of Love From Other Apostolic Letters**

1. Love Ferently (by the Apostle Peter): 1 Peter 1: 22: ***Since you have in obedience to the truth purified your souls for a sincere love of the brethren, **ferently love one another from the heart.*****
2. Love and the Crown of Life (by the Apostle James, the Brother of Jesus): James 1: 12: ***Blessed is a man who perseveres under trial; for once he has been approved, **he will receive the crown of life, which the Lord has promised to those who love Him.*****
3. God Is Just for Those Who Love Him (Authorship Is in Dispute): Hebrews 6: 9 Through 11: ***Beloved, we are convinced of better things concerning you, and things that accompany salvation, though we are speaking in this way. **For God is not unjust so as to forget your work and the love which you have shown toward His name, in having ministered and in still ministering to the saints. And we desire that each one of you show the same diligence so as to realize the full assurance of hope until the end.*****

## The Message of Love From Apostle Paul's Letters

If the apostle John is the Apostle of Love, then the apostle Paul is the Great Instructor of Love. It's an objective statement to say Paul is the most prolific writer regarding the topic of love. But it's not just how much he has written, it's more profound of how he has written. He is truly an excellent word-smith, and is often very poetic in his writing style. He also makes love so powerfully optimistic that he removes the fear of death from one's mind (an intellectual element) as well as from one's spirit and soul (an emotional element). "O' Death, where is your victory? O' Death, where is your sting?"

1. Love, Hope and the Holy Spirit: Romans 5: 5: ***Hope does not disappoint because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who has given it to us.***
2. God's Love for His Children: Romans 5: 8: ***God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.***
3. You Are Saved by Hope: Romans 8: 24, 25: ***For in hope we have been saved, but hope that is seen is not hope; for who hopes for what he already sees? But if we hope for what we do not see, with perseverance we wait eagerly for it.***

Personal Reflections: Time and time again, the New Testament interconnects the three great spiritual attributes of hope, faith, and love. The word "grace" is also often included. In addition, all four words are often associated with the Christian doctrine of salvation. However, the Protestant doctrine highly focuses upon "salvation by the justification by faith." This doctrine is also related to the doctrine of "substitutionary atonement." The root word of atonement is "atone." From a Christian perspective the word "atone" means: "to make up for errors, deficiencies and sins." We are guilty as sin and the penalty of sin is death. However, Jesus substitutes Himself in replacement of the sinner and takes on the burden of the sinner's punishment. Jesus dies in replacement of the sinner so that the sinner can be saved from spiritual death.

Now, consider this thought. You rarely hear a Protestant discuss salvation by hope or by love. In spite of this fact, here's a Biblical verse by Paul that explicitly states "**in hope we have been saved.**" What do you believe? Is hope alone sufficient to save a person from spiritual death? If God is truly the essence and nature of perfect love, then wouldn't an iota of hope be sufficient to give His precious child a continuing chance for spiritual salvation?

Lastly, it's noted the Bible also states that spiritual salvation is achieved by the power and glory of love. This issue has already been address in Section 4.9 and under the subsection titled "The Great Commandment – The Law of Love." The associated Bible verses are: Matthew 22: 34 – 40, Mark 12: 28 – 34, and Luke 10: 25 – 29. It should also be emphasized that Jesus is directly responding to this question: ***Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?*** Of course, "eternal life" is the very heart and soul of the concept of spiritual salvation. The next verse is a continuation of the concept of "salvation by love."

4. The Benefit of Loving God: Romans 8: 28: ***God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God.***
5. No external Power Can Separate God's Love From You: Romans 8: 38 and 39: ***I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor power, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is Christ Jesus our Lord.***

Personal Reflections: Bible scholars and clergy are quick to note that this list does not include the individual person. In other words, only you – the individual – has the power and ability to separate yourself from the love of God. It's your internal power of sentient free-will that allows you to accept your Creator or to reject your Creator. You create a relationship with your Creator by **truly accepting** His love. And because your Creator first loved you, you are now empowered to unconditionally love Him and all His children. This is the spiritual doctrine of the sanctification by love.

6. Love's Devotions: Romans 12: 9 and 10: ***Let love be without hypocrisy. Abhor what is evil; cling to what is good. Be devoted to one another in brotherly love.***
7. God Preparations for Those Who Love Him: 1 Corinthians 2: 9: ***Things which eye has not seen, and ear has not heard, and which have not entered the heart of man, all that God has prepared for those who love Him.***
8. Love Edifies: 1 Corinthians 8: 1: ***Knowledge makes arrogant, but love edifies.***

Note: The word "**edify**" means: (1) to build up or increase the hope, faith, morality, or other similar attribute; and (2) to uplift."

9. God Knows Who Loves Him: 1 Corinthians 8: 3: ***If anyone loves God, he is known by Him.***

10. A Loving Goodbye: 2 Corinthians 13: 11 Through 14: *Finally brethren, rejoice, be made complete, be comforted, be like-minded, live in peace; and **the God of love and peace** shall be with you. Greet one another with a holy kiss. All the saints greet you. The grace of the lord Jesus Christ, **and the love of God**, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit, be with you all.*
11. The Fruit of the Spirit: Galatians 5: 22 and 23: *The fruit of the Spirit is **love**, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control; against such things there is no law.*

Personal Reflections: Bible scholars and clergy are quick to note that the first fruit of the Spirit is the attribute of love. This also reinforces the doctrine that love is the greatest.

12. God's Loving Mercy: Ephesians 2: 4 and 5: ***God, rich in mercy, because of His great love with which He loved us**, even when we were dead in our transgressions, made us alive together with Christ. **By grace you have been saved.***

Personal Reflections: Bible scholars and clergy note that the grace that saves you is the grace of love. The grace of faith may also save you, but it's the grace of love that's associated with our gracious and benevolent Creator's richness of mercy. Know also that mercy is a product of love.

13. Imitate God's Love: Ephesians 5: 1 and 2: *Therefore, **be imitators of God, as beloved children; and walk in love**, just as Christ also loved you, and gave Himself up for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God as a fragrant aroma.*
14. Husbands and Their Ultimate Love: Ephesians 5: 25: ***Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself up for her.***

Personal Reflections: From my personal experience I've learned that many Christian men are uneasy with this verse. What it states is for a husband to sacrifice his life so that his wife will be saved. The meaning of the verse could also be stated in this Biblical phrase. "Greater love has no husband than the husband who is willing to lay down his life for his wife." So, here's a question for the husbands to consider. Would you be willing to die in order to save your wife's life? This is an unfair question, but hopefully it's also a very though provoking question. As a good Christian warrior, would you be willing to march into hell for a heavenly fight?

15. Love With Faith: – Ephesians 6: 23 and 24: *Peace be with the brethren, and **love with faith**, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. Grace be with all those who love our Lord Jesus Christ with a love incorruptible.*
16. Your Love Must Evolve – Philippians 1: 9: *This I pray, that **your love may abound still more and more in real knowledge and all discernment.***
17. Be Like Christ: Philippians 2: 1 – 4: *If therefore there is any encouragement in Christ, **if there is any consolation of love**, if there is any fellowship of the Spirit, if any affection and compassion, make my joy complete by being of the same mind, **maintaining the same love**, unite in spirit, intent on one purpose. Do nothing from selfishness or empty conceit, but with humility of mind let each of you regard one another as more important than himself; do not merely look out for your own personal interests, but also for the interests of others.*
18. Abound in Love: 1 Thessalonians 3: 11 –13: *Now may our God and Father Himself and Jesus our Lord direct our way to you; and **may the Lord cause you to increase and abound in love for one another, and for all men**, just as we also do for you; so that He may establish your hearts unblamable in holiness, before our God and Father at the coming of our Lord Jesus with all His saints.*
19. We Are Taught by God to Love: 1 Thessalonians 4: 9: *Now as to the love of the brethren, you have no need for anyone to write to you, **for you yourselves are taught by God to love one another.***
20. Love, Hope and Grace: 2 Thessalonians 4: 9: *Now may our Lord Jesus Christ Himself and God our Father, **who has loved us and given us eternal comfort and good hope by grace**, comfort and strengthen your hearts in every good work and word.*
21. Love the Appearance of Christ in Preparation for Physical Death: 2 Timothy 4: 7 and 8: *I have fought the good fight. I have finished the course. I have kept the faith. In the future there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day; and not only to me, **but also to all who have loved His appearing.***

## **Paul's Love Chapter – 1 Corinthians, Chapter 13**

Paul's Love Chapter is one of the most favorite writings in the entire Christian Bible. Verse 4 is one of the most popular verses in the chapter, where it begins: "Love is patient, love is kind." The most popular verse is the last verse: "But now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love." What makes the chapter really interesting is that it's right in the middle of Paul's scorching admonishment to the Corinthian church. This was a charismatic church where many of the congregation spoke in tongues, prophesized, performed spiritual healings, and exercised other gifts of the Spirit. These charismatic Christians became proud of their spiritual gifts, and became so proud that they were arrogant. Accordingly, there was great dissension in the church, affectively causing dissatisfaction throughout the church. The charismatic members were separating themselves from the non-charismatic members. This act of charismatic separation still occurs today. The Bible verse 1 Corinthians 13: 12 ends with Paul saying:

*All do not have gifts of healings, do they? All do not speak with tongues, do they? All do not interpret, do they? But earnestly desire the greater gifts. And I show you a still more excellent way.*

**Chapter 13 is subtitled "The Excellence of Love."** The chapter begins by addressing the ability to talk with the tongues of angels. It's not well known that Paul is actually talking about the spiritual gift of speaking in tongues. It's also important to realize that the chapter includes several other important topics besides the topic of love. Paul describes many important attributes of love, but he also addresses: (1) the meaningless of spiritual gifts without love, (2) the limits of spiritual gifts which only apply to our physical world, (3) the importance of maturity, and especially spiritual maturity, (4) the limits of spiritual knowledge within our physical world, thus causing great uncertainty in our world, and (5) love is the greatest of all spiritual gifts. Love is the only spiritual gift that is not limited to our physical world. In contrast, love is the very essence and nature of the spiritual world; that is, our world-to-come. Wherever you find love on earth, there too you find a little bit of heaven on earth.

## **First Corinthians, Chapter 13**

### **The Excellence of Love**

*If I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, but do not have love, I have become a noisy gong or a clanging cymbal. And if I have the gift of prophecy, and know all mysteries and all knowledge; and if I have all faith, so as to remove mountains, but do not have love, I am nothing. And if I give all my possessions to feed the poor, and if I deliver my body to be burned, but do not have love, it profits me nothing.*

*Love is patient, love is kind, and is not jealous. Love does not brag, is not arrogant, and does not act unbecomingly. Love does not seek its own, is not provoked, does not take into account a wrong suffered, does not rejoice in unrighteousness, but rejoices with the truth. Love bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love never fails.*

*But if there are gifts of prophecy, they will be done away. If there are tongues, they will cease. If there is knowledge, it will be done away. For we know in part, and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect comes, the partial will be done away.*

*When I was a child, I used to speak as a child, think as a child, reason as a child. When I became a man, I did away with childish things. For now we see in a mirror dimly, but then face to face; now I know in part, but then I shall know fully just as I also have been fully known. But now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.*

#### **4.10 Justification by Faith Versus Sanctification by Love**

The Christian doctrine of salvation by “justification by faith” is explicitly and repeatedly stated in the New Testament. This fact is vividly clear and is not – and cannot – be contested. However, a sensible mind that has some knowledge of the “love messages” of the New Testament will naturally wonder why the doctrine of “salvation by the sanctification by love” is not accepted, embraced and taught as a true path to mankind’s loving Creator. Surely and truly, these two Christian

doctrines are totally compatible. Sanctification by our Creator's perfect love is predicated upon the internalized belief in the living reality of mankind's Creator. All believers of God are justified by God solely because their faith provides the assurance and confidence in the reality of God's existence. In other words, before you can be sanctified by love you must first be justified by faith. Even before you can be justified by faith, you must first be consecrated by hope; that is, to be made sacred by the most elemental belief in the living reality of God. This is the Great Hope, and once it's truly planted in the human spirit, the path to justification begins. When spiritual justification is attained, then the final enlightenment of sanctification begins. Therefore, believe and remember this great spiritual process. **Hope consecrates. Faith justifies. And love sanctifies.**

The nature and essence of love is an active topic throughout the Bible, but it's especially expounded upon in the New Testament. Why isn't godly-love a direct doorway to God's acceptance and belonging, just the same as godly-faith is a direct doorway to God's acceptance and belong? Doesn't our gracious and benevolent Creator love all His children? And because He is perfect love, then wouldn't He give His wayward child a second chance as long as He sees there's an iota of hope that this child could become an Advocate of Love? Also consider this question. What is the greater spiritual power – the justification by faith or the sanctification by love? Didn't Paul already answer this question in his Corinthian's love chapter: "But now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love." In the pursuit to answer this quandary, let's review the New Testament to see what is said about sanctification.

1. Sanctified in Truth – John 17: 16 – 20: This verse involves Jesus praying to His Heavenly Father. *My disciples are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. **Sanctify them in the truth.** Your word is truth. As you did send Me into the world, I also have sent them into the world. **And for their sakes I sanctify Myself, that they themselves also may be sanctified in truth.** I do not ask in behalf of these alone, but for those also who believe in Me through their word.*
2. The Inheritance of Sanctification – Acts 20: 32: In this verse Paul is talking to the Ephesus church. *And now I commend you to God and to the word of His grace, which is able to build you up **and to give you the inheritance among all those who are sanctified.***
3. Sanctification and Redemption – 1 Corinthians 1: 29 and 30: *No man should boast before God. But by His doing you are in Christ Jesus, **who became to us wisdom from God, and righteous and sanctification, and redemption, that just as it is written, let him who boast, boast in the Lord.***

4. Sanctification by the Believing Spouse – 1 Corinthians 7: 14: *For the unbelieving husband is **sanctified through his believing wife**, and the unbelieving wife is **sanctified through her believing husband**; for otherwise your children are unclean, but now they are holy.*
5. Sanctification and Sexual Immorality – 1 Thessalonians 4: 3 and 4: ***For this is the will of God, your sanctification**; that is, that you abstain from sexual immorality; that each of you know how to possess his own vessel in sanctification and honor.*
6. God Calls Us in Sanctification – 1 Thessalonians 4: 7 and 8: ***For God has not called us for the purpose of impurity, but in sanctification.** Consequently, he who rejects this is not rejecting man but God who gives His Holy Spirit to you.*
7. Salvation Through Sanctification by the Spirit – 2 Thessalonians 2: 13: *But we should always give thanks to God for you, brethren beloved by the Lord, because God has chosen you from the beginning for **salvation through sanctification by the Spirit** and faith in the truth.*
8. Sanctification by the Word of God and Prayer – 1 Timothy 4: 4 and 5: *For everything created by God is good, and nothing is to be rejected if it is received with gratitude; **for it is sanctified by means of the word of God and prayer.***
9. Sanctified to be Useful for God – 2 Timothy 2: 20 and 21: *Now in a large house there are not only gold and silver vessels, but also vessels of wood and of earthenware, and some to honor and some to dishonor. Therefore, if a man cleanses himself from these things, **he will be a vessel for honor, sanctified, useful to the Master, prepared for every good work.***
10. The Unification by Sanctification – Hebrews 2: 11: ***For both He who sanctifies and those who are sanctified are all from one Father**; for which reason He is not ashamed to call them brethren.*

## Personal Reflections

Our gracious and benevolent Creator's perfect love is the most incredible, beautiful and awesome spectacle you can possibly behold. It delights the heart, uplifts the spirit, and consoles the weary soul. **And everybody needs love!** It doesn't matter if you're male or female, or if you're a bigender person or a unigender person. **Everybody needs love!** It doesn't matter if you're a blue-collar worker, a white-collar worker, or if you work at all, and it certainly doesn't matter if you're rich or poor. Furthermore, it doesn't matter if you're old or young, or if you're in good health or poor health. **Everybody must have love!** It also doesn't

matter what color your skin is or what nationality you are. And it surely doesn't matter if you're beautiful or ordinary, or if you're skinny or obese, or if you're highly intelligent or intellectually challenged. **Everybody still needs to be loved!** You could be a spiritualist, a religionist, a theist or an atheist, and you could have the mind of a criminal or the mind of an angel. **You still need the beauty and power of love!** And it surely doesn't matter if you're a Jew, a Muslim, a Hindu, a Buddhist, a Christian, a Baptist, a Methodist, a Catholic, or any other manmade religion, sect or denomination. **Everybody needs love, and that especially includes you and me!**

Now, I know many, many Christians disagree with my personal concepts of sanctification by love. That's fine with me, because my love for God, country and neighbor empowers me to be patient, kind and tolerant of other people's personal beliefs. In the same manner, a sincerely loving Christian who honestly disagrees with me will be patient, kind and tolerant of my personal beliefs. I also know that honest disagreements are a common and acceptable occurrence within the Christian Church. One of the biggest disagreements in the Church concerns the sacrament of baptism. This disagreement began with the birth of the Church and blazed like a great fire during the First Reformation, whereby these flames continue to burn today. The main issue is this. Does a believer have to be "**properly baptized**" in order to obtain Christian salvation? I believe the most heated Christian argument I've ever heard concerned opposing beliefs regarding what is a proper and acceptable baptism? Here are the opposing views. Is infant baptism truly acceptable to our loving Creator, or does a person have to be old enough to be self-accountable in order to be properly baptized? And then to add to the confusion, can a person be properly baptized by the sprinkling of water, or must the person be totally submerged in water? To add fuel to the fire, there are ultra liberal Christians who deeply believe you don't even have to be baptized in order to be saved.

While I don't consider myself to be an ultra Christian, I have to humbly admit that I personally believe salvation has nothing to do with baptism. It's your unconditional love for God and your unconditional love for your fellow sentient brothers and sisters that ultimately guide you to an eternal relationship with your Creator. **Ultimately, love isn't everything. It's the only thing!** To this great paradigm you can tie all your hopes and entrust your entire faith, and thereby secure a peace of mind that's surpasses all human understanding. Our magnificent Creator loves you without limits, often in spite of your cold heart and its blemishes of conditional love. Everyone who loves God and neighbor shall grow leaps and bounds in the Kingdom of Love. Thereby, we continue to take our best and make it better. Surely and truly, the art of love is an evolutionary process.

## **4.11 God's Perfect Love Versus Ancient Mankind's Fears, Superstitions and Ritual Sacrifices**

The sciences of evolution and archaeology are always in search of mankind's origin. The oldest hominid (that is, the family of man including his ancient evolutionary ancestors) is nicknamed the Millennium Man. He's believed to be about six million years old. His teeth and jaw structure clearly link him to mankind, but he was only about four feet tall – about the height of a modern chimpanzee. The important question to consider is this. Did the Millennium Man have a sentient nature? Of course, no one knows the answer to this question, and we'll probably never know the answer within our terrestrial realm. Nevertheless, sometime in mankind's evolutionary process the animalistic man finally reached a state where his sentient nature could be successfully integrated into his avatar's body. In some manner, somehow and someway, **an ember of mankind's Creator** was successfully infused into the primitive spirits of our first sentient brothers and sisters. While God's "**spark of life**" resides in all living forms, God's "**ember of life**" makes man a sentient human being. **And while all life is consecrated, sentient human life is also sacred.** Thus, mankind is lifted high above the animal kingdom. From this point on, mankind's evolutionary path was diverted into a new and upward direction. Mankind was no longer a pure animal, but was now a sentient child of the Lord of Life. This new spiritual creature was now a part of God's family.

**Now, an ember of God resides within the spirit of every sentient human being; and thereby a very active and beneficial symbiotic relationship is created.** As a consequence, mankind's intellectual capacity quickly grew, which in turn lead to the development of language, writing, reading, and eventually architecture, engineering and civilizations. Simultaneously, man's spiritual nature also grew in leaps and bounds. As a result, organized religious practices were created, including the establishment of religious beliefs, doctrines, dogmas and ceremonial rituals. However, fear was the driving force of man's first religious organizations. There were many gods to appease and satisfy, and the natural state of the world was a very dangerous place. There were hundreds of wild beasts and vipers that could easily kill you, but these perils were insignificant in comparison to dangerous weather conditions. Accordingly, fear was mankind's prime religious driver, and the organized concepts of love were beyond perception. What was man's answer to overcoming his fear of the wrath of his gods? The answer is sacrifice; that is, human sacrifice. From the very beginning mankind bribed his gods in order to overcome the fear of their wrath and vengeance. Pity the mass of poor people who didn't have the means to bribe their wrathful, angry, raging and violent gods. Even their god of love required ritual sacrifices.

Eventually, a quantum jump in mankind's spiritual evolutionary development occurred. A tribe of people casted off their polytheistic belief system and replaced it with a monotheistic belief system. In addition, they declared they were the chosen people, specifically chosen to have a personal relationship with their God and Creator. This was because God truly loved them. By doing this, they freed themselves from many of their religious fears. Yet, their need to sacrifice to God could not be overcome. But here's the good news. Human sacrifice became forbidden. Unfortunately, animal sacrifice was so strongly entrenched in the human psyche that the practice could not be eradicated. Millenniums would pass before fearful religious sacrificial practices would end. And some people say such practices still occur in certain isolated corners of the world. Nevertheless and as a result of the advent of monotheism, planet earth was now ready for an immense spiritual revelation. **Mankind's divine Creator could now visit man in the form of humanity and would reveal the perfect love of mankind's gracious Creator.**

## **Jesus and the Temple's Sacrificial System**

When Jesus came to earth in the flesh and shared His comforting teachings and revelations – those teaching being primarily founded upon hope, faith and love – the world was still highly entrenched in animal sacrificial rituals. This was especially true of the nation of Israel. Just imagine how bloody, gruesome and gory the sacrificial altar must have been. I once read the floor was covered in blood. Did Jesus ever participate in animal sacrifices? Did He ever buy a temple animal and have it sacrificed so His sins would be forgiven? The Bible doesn't address this matter. However, the Bible records in Matthew 21: 12 – 14 one incident.

*And Jesus entered the temple and cast out all those who were buying and selling in the temple, and overturned the tables of the moneychangers and the seats of those who were selling doves. And He said to them, "It is written My house shall be a house of prayer, but you are making it a robbers den." And the blind and the lame came to Him in the temple, and He healed them.*

This story is one of the few stories that are recorded in all four gospels: Matthew 21: 12 – 15; Mark 11: 15 – 18; Luke 19: 45 and 46; and John 2: 14 – 16. It's also interesting to note that the story occurs at the end of Jesus' ministry in the gospels of Matthew, Mark and Luke, and at the beginning of the gospel of John. This fact has created a lot of heated debates regarding the recorded documents. (1) Did the gospel of John incorrectly record the incident? (2) Did Jesus actually

cleanse the temple ones or twice? (3) How many times did Jesus visit Jerusalem, and did He cleanses the temple every time? (4) Was the cleansing of the temple the final incident that caused the elders and leaders to pursue Jesus' death?

Each version is slightly different, thus making the story even more interesting. Under any condition, Jesus' life and teachings were highly entangled with the human drive to have sacrificial rituals. Jesus' first followers simply could not separate themselves from their long-term traditional practice of religious sacrifices. In order for their sins to be forgiven, some form of sacrifice had to occurred. Therefore, Jesus had to become their sacrificial lamb in order for their sins to be forgiven by the Heavenly Father.

While the individual sinners were originally responsible for all the consequences of their sinfulness, Jesus was willing to be the sinner's surrogate and accept the dutiful punishment that was rendered by the Holy Father. In other words, the sinners do the crimes (commit sins) and Jesus does the time (endures the punishments rendered). Thus, Jesus steps forward and gives Himself as the One who shall accept and endure the penalties rendered. Being the Son of God, Jesus' ultimate sacrifice **atones** for all the sins of all true believers. Furthermore, Jesus' substitutionary sacrifice covers all sins of the disobedient believers. This includes all past sins, all present sins, all future sins, all sins of commission, and all sins of omission. Accordingly, Jesus personally makes amends and reparations for all sinful offenses of all true Christian believers. In other words, the Holy Father demands restitution for each and every sinful act against Him. Now, Jesus who loves His followers with a perfect love, steps forward and substitutes Himself to pay the restitution required by the Holy Father. This is the ultimate sacrifice of true-love. Greater love has no one than the person who lays down one's life so their loved ones may be saved from death. As herein presented in a nut shell, this is the ultra important Christian doctrine called "**substitutionary atonement**."

## **Biblical Support of Jesus' Sacrificial Death**

While the phrase "**substitutionary atonement**" is not in the Bible, there are many verses in the New Testament that address the doctrine. This doctrine is clearly and repeatedly defined in the Bible. Substitutionary atonement is also associated with the doctrine of "**justification by faith**." The theological issue of "**original sin**" creates another source of confusion to the entire matter. As a result of the issue, Jesus has also been called "**the second Adam**" and "**the last Adam**." The second Adam's holy mission was to repair and mend the consequences of the first Adam's sinful disobedience. These consequences lead to the theological concept of Adam's original sin which then was imputed to all of mankind since the creation of Adam. Isn't our loving Creator's perfect love powerfully sufficient to reconcile and amend mankind's relationship with their gracious and benevolent

Creator? Naturally, there are some very different opinions regarding these issues, and these differences sometimes result in very heated debates that continue today. Nonetheless, the Christian faith requires the belief that Jesus was a human sacrifice, as required by the Heavenly Father, and given in order to **reconcile** the true believers with the Holy Father. Now, stop and reflect upon the impact that “reconciliation” creates. This includes the substance and nature of **mercy**, **forgiveness**, **grace** and **propitiation**. I’ll return to the concept of original sin in Section 4.11 and under the subsection titled “The Ultimate Collision Between the Science of Evolution and Christianity.” Now, here are a few of the very important verses that address the issues just discussed.

1. Romans 5: 8 and 9: *But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, **Christ died for us**. Much more then, having now been justified by His blood, we shall be saved from the wrath of God through Him.*
2. Romans 17: 8: *But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, **Christ died for us**.*
3. Hebrew 9: 13 and 14: *For if the blood of goats and bull and the ashes of a heifer sprinkling those who have been defiled, sanctify for the cleansing of the flesh, how much more will the **blood of Christ**, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without blemish to God, **cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?***
4. 1 Peter 2: 24: *He **Himself bore our sins** in His body on the cross, **that we might die to sin and live to righteousness**; for by His wounds your were healed.*
5. 1 Peter 3: 18: *For **Christ also died for sins once for all**, the just for the unjust, in order that He might bring us to God, having been put to death in the flesh, but make alive in the spirit.*

It’s interesting to note that the doctrine of substitutionary atonement is not explicitly addressed in the Christian Bible. There’s a story in the gospel of Matthew that is often linked to substitutionary atonement. This story is recorded in Matthew 20: 20 – 28. The story does not include the word “substitution” or the word “atonement.” The word that is used to link the story to the doctrine of substitutionary atonement is “**ransom**.” I personally believe Jesus’ use of the word “ransom” is a metaphor and has nothing to do with the doctrine of substitutionary atonement. But many, if not most, theologians strongly disagree with me. The story begins with the mother of the disciples John and James asking Jesus to have her two sons sit on His right and left sides once they enter His heavenly kingdom. Jesus answers by saying His Heavenly Father determines who sits beside Him.

Jesus then says the mother is acting like a Gentile, whereby Gentiles like to “lord” themselves above other people. The story transitions into a lesson about social and civil power and authority, and alludes to the lust for power. Every now and then you hear a TV minister say Jesus was the ransom paid to Satan in order to free the true Christian believers from Satan’s authority and bondage. Here’s the rest of the story which now becomes a lesson about humility and servitude.

*Jesus called the disciples to Himself, and said, “Your know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great men exercise authority over them. It is not so among you, but whoever wishes to become great among you shall be your servant, and whoever wishes to be first among you shall be your slave; just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many.”*

Lastly, consider these questions. Who is Jesus to pay the ransom to? Is it to his Heavenly Father? Could our Heavenly Father really be a kidnaper and could He really do evil acts that required the blood and death of the innocence Jesus, His only begotten Son? Or was the ransom paid to Satan and the powers of evil? With all the powers of our Heavenly Father, would He really negotiate with the powers of evil? Whatever your personal answer is will always be submersed in doubt and uncertainty. This story is truly a Great Mystery Of Life (designated as a “GMOL.” Hopefully the answers to this enigma will be clearly defined in the world to come.

## **The Ultimate Collision** **Between the Science of Evolution and Christianity**

Christianity’s birth is directly derived from Judaism, and it’s only natural for the Jewish belief system – that system being defined in the Bible’s Old Testament – have a major effect upon Christian doctrines, beliefs and dogmas. **Critical to the discussion are the beliefs regarding Adam and Eve and their original sin.** The goal of this discussion is to define how the Christian doctrine of substitutionary atonement is depended upon the reality of Adam and Eve and the long-term consequences of their original sin.

### **Original Sin**

We’re all imperfect people living in an imperfect world, and we’re all created that way. In fact, we’ve never been perfect and we’ll probably never be perfect. We are profoundly imperfect creatures! Furthermore, our imperfections

are our sins. On the other hand, mankind is already perfect in two areas of life. We're all perfect sinners, and we're all perfectly imperfect! Atlas! So is the way of the sentient human being; thus, always being fickle and counterproductive to our own good. We call this despicable feature of the "the Human Factor."

Meanwhile, traditional Christianity doesn't totally agree with this perspective of human imperfection. The traditional Christian position is that the first created sentient human beings – Adam and Eve – were created perfect, or at least near perfect. The Bible actually states that all of God's creation (which naturally includes Adam and Eve) was considered to be very good (Genesis 1: 31). This traditional belief is based upon the proposition that Adam (who was created from the dust of the earth) was created very good, and also, the following creation of Eve (who was created from one of Adam's ribs) was also created very good. Now, if Adam and Eve were truly created very good, then would they have eaten the forbidden fruit from the tree that grew in the center of the Garden of Eden? Some people say the tree was called "the tree of wisdom" or "the tree of knowledge." The Bible actually calls it "the tree of the knowledge of good and evil."

Now, how could Adam and Eve possibly be considered to be very good (much less perfect) when their actions were selfish and rebellious? In addition, their imperfect actions were preceded with imperfect thoughts and desires. To the traditional Christian perspective, Adam and Eve's open defiance is mankind's first sin, and it is therefore called mankind's original sin. Furthermore, every human being born after Adam and Eve are also imperfect because they inherit the natural sin which Adam and Eve created. In other words, we're all guilty by association with the first man and woman created by God. This is a very profound issue in regards to many associated issues. I should also note that these issues have been hotly debated throughout the millenniums. Here are some of these issues.

1. How does baptism effect original sin? Does infant baptism protect the child from the curse of Adam and Eve's original sin? Is infant baptism acceptable, or must the person be submerged in water? Is the water really "holy"?
2. If a newborn baby, or a very young child dies, then do they go to hell because they never had the intellectual ability to understand the issues of original sin, personal individual sin, and the reconciliation with God? What age must a person be to be truly accountable for their personal sins?
3. What about Jesus' mother Mary? Since she was born a decedents of Adam and Eve, then isn't she also contaminated and guilty of original sin? Yet, didn't Mary have to be holy in order to be worthy of giving birth to Jesus?

4. Also, what about Jesus? Because He was born as a physical sentient human being, then doesn't He also bare the shame, the guilt, and the consequences of original sin? How does Jesus overcome His earthly original sin?
5. What type of sin is original sin? Is it a venial sin, a mortal sin, an unforgivable sin, or any other type of sin that's one of the classified sins. Just as a point of interest, the Catechism of the Catholic Church list 42 types of mortal sins.
6. Are the punishments decreed by God justified for the offense incurred? This especially applies to the punishments imputed to Adam and Eve's progeny? According to traditional Christianity, every person ever born after Adam and Eve's creation are condemned by the original sin committed by Adam and Eve. Are these punishments truly fair, reasonable and reflective of perfect love? I thought love is patient and kind, generously merciful, actively forgiving, and quick to reconcile. If you don't believe me, then ask the Prodigal Son.

Now, as a result of Adam and Eve's open rebellion against God, they became estranged from God and required His loving mercy, forgiveness and reconciliation. How do they regain their original relationship with God? And remember, God's love isn't just any type of love. God's love is perfect love, and it's offered to all His earthly children. But, did God's perfect love reconcile Adam and Eve with God? The answer is no! Instead of loving reconciliation, Adam and Eve turned to a religious, sacrificial ritual system. Some people call the practice of sacrificial rituals the bribing of God, or the appeasement to a very angry, resentful and revengeful God. Sacrificial rituals became a core element of all nations and all religions, especially including the Jewish nation. These practices also included the sacrifice of virgins and new born infant children.

Through the millenniums the Jewish theology began to address the coming of a great messiah who would free Israel from the bondage of their dilemmas. What was to come was not what most Israelites conceived or desired. Of course, what came was Jesus along with His teachings of love, His miracles, and His ultimate sacrifice which would reconcile the Children of Humanity with their gracious, benevolent and loving Creator. Accordingly, Jesus became the second Adam, and He must be worthy to be the ultimate sacrifice which God finds acceptable to forgive all the sins – past, present and future – of all true believers. What the first Adam failed to sustain, the second Adam totally satisfies and fulfills. Consequently, Jesus substitutes Himself to receive the rightful punishment of mankind; and thus, He atones for the sins of mankind. This is called the doctrine of substitutionary atonement. By Jesus' sacrificial action, true believers become reconciled with the Holy Father and are now acceptable to dwell in the Father's great heavenly mansion.

## **The Two Adams**

The Christian concept of the two Adams is well established in Christian theological commentaries. However, in the four gospels there are no references of Jesus being ascribed in any association with Adam. On the other hand, Paul addresses Jesus in association with Adam in his first letter to the Corinthians.

*1 Corinthians 15: 20 – 22: But now Christ has been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who are asleep. For since by man came death, by a man also came the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ all shall be made alive.*

*1 Corinthians 15: 45: So also it is written, “The first man Adam became a living soul.” The last Adam became a life-giving spirit.*

## **The Scientific Failure of Substitutionary Atonement**

**Now, here are the parts to remember.** Substitutionary atonement and its related issues are not straight forward doctrines of Christianity, but instead have various models of interpretation. Some models include the issue of original sin as an important feature of substitutionary atonement. Some models don't even address original sin. Yet, Jesus has been called “the second Adam” and “the last Adam.” The important point is that Adam and Eve are very critical elements in Christian theology regarding the ultimate forgiveness of sins. What would life be like today if Adam and Eve did not commit their original sin? Would the sacrifice of Jesus even been necessary? Would He needed to come to earth to fulfill His mission to teach hope, faith and love, mercy, forgiveness, reconciliation and salvation?

This is the point I'm finally getting to. **What happens to the doctrines and beliefs of Christianity if Adam and Eve never existed?** If Adam and Eve never existed, then there would be no original sin. And if there is no original sin, then there's no need for a second Adam to sacrifice Himself so true believers could be saved. Lastly, if Jesus didn't need to substitute Himself for the sins of the world, then the doctrine of substitutionary atonement is not valid, and therefore, is not needed. So then, what is the purpose and meaning of Jesus' earthly visit, His life, His crucifixion and death, and most profoundly, His resurrection? I'll continue with this discussion in a moment, but first I need to further address the basic topic of this section.

The answer to the above question (concerning the reality of Adam and Eve) leads to the greatest conflict between modern science and traditional Christianity. The science of evolution simply does not, and cannot, support the spontaneous creation of Adam and Eve, especially by their creation from dust of the ground and from Adam's rib. The truth is, mankind in our current state of evolutionary development will never learn the true origin of mankind. It would take a direct revelation from God Almighty for mankind to learn their true source of origin. Even then, many people would refuse to believe God's revelation.

Meanwhile, the traditional Christian story of creation is extremely difficult to accept for those who have the soul and mind that are founded upon a scientific foundation. For the scientifically inclined, the Biblical story of Adam and Eve is the result of our ancient-ancient forefathers doing their very best with their limited intellectual capacity, and thus groping for their best understanding and conjecture of mankind's origin. This was a man-in-the-moment event that served our forefathers at their time in earth's history. But in today's highly evolved, intelligent and scientific world, to continue to believe the story of Adam and Eve is true is perceived by most Americans as being the actions of a simple minded person. The Christian Church must grow and evolve in a truly loving and tolerant manner (open hearts, open minds and open doors) that makes the traditional Church more palatable for scientific believers.

## **The Boundless Love of Our Gracious Creator**

As a result of my sincere reflections, I've come to believe the doctrine of substitutionary atonement has significant uncertainties and elements that are not sensible, reasonable or rational. For me, the concept of substitutionary atonement is Old Testament Legalism and is not New Testament Love. This doctrine also attacks the authority and sovereignty of our gracious and loving Creator. Here are some of the intellectual challenges the doctrine of substitutionary atonement faces.

1. Would a Supreme, Creative Being – whose essence and nature is **perfect love** – have His only Child and Son viciously and maliciously murdered for the benefit of His lesser Children of Humanity whom He already unconditionally and ultimately loves?
2. If our magnificent Creator is truly omnificent (all creative), omniscient (all knowing), omnipotent (all powerful), and omnipresent (all present), then why would He pay a ransom to an evil, disobedient creature which He created?
3. Why would God, who's perfectly good and righteous, compromise His very good creation with the powers of darkness, especially when He's already dealing from a position of ultimate power and authority?

4. If our Creator truly is truly gracious, benevolent and loving, then why would He reject all manmade religions except for Christianity, and only then for those “highly selective true believers” who adamantly believe Jesus was a human sacrifice?
5. If our loving Creator forbid human sacrifice, then why would He mandate Divine sacrifice? In other words, isn't the religious ritual murder of Divinity far, far worse than the religious ritual murder of a sentient human being?
6. Did Jesus appease His first earthly believers in regards to their intense and internal drive for sacrificial rituals knowing He could never change their minds (in regards to their earthly nature) about the practice? In other words, the drive for bloody sacrificial rituals was so great that the truth of the matter could only be accepted in the spiritual realm.
7. How can anyone make the doctrine of substitutionary atonement compatible with the doctrine of God's perfect love? For what power is greater, our Creator's perfect, unconditional love or mankind's needs for sacrificial rituals?
8. There's a little known Bible verse Matthew 12: 7 that's worthy of our honest contemplations and reflections. Jesus is in a discussion with some Pharisees about what is lawful to do on the Sabbath, and what is unlawful to do on the Sabbath. It was a Sabbath day and the disciples were gathering heads of grain to eat because they were very hungry. The Pharisees told Jesus this was unlawful to do on the Sabbath. This was Jesus' closing statement to the Pharisees, “***But if you had known what this means, ‘I desire compassion and not sacrifice,’ you would not have condemned the innocent.***” Does this mean our gracious Creator wants His children to practice loving compassion instead of ritual sacrifices? I believe the answer is an emphatic YES!!!

## **Atonement, Attunement and Attainment**

In my personal reflections I've come to believe the Christian concept of atonement is a very important principle. How can we – the immensely imperfect sentient children of a great, magnificent and perfect Creator Being – be worthy of just being in His presence? However, if our Creator truly is the essence and nature of perfect love, then He already loves all His sentient children just as they are. **The first attribute of love is acceptance and belonging.** If this is true then our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator has already accepted all His earthly children just as they are. Of course this doesn't mean our gracious and benevolent Holy Father is satisfied with His children when they think or act in an unloving

manner. Selfish, thoughtless character is never acceptable but is tolerated. So then, why does our Creator tolerate His children's disobedience? It's because **God first loved mankind**. But beware! Know this great truth. Always remember you cannot conceal your deepest beliefs and thoughts from your Creator. Accordingly, the world-to-come involves "**total transparency**."

So then, how does mankind atone for his sins and disobedience? I believe the answer is found in the first letter of John. Consider First John 4: 19. "**We love because He first loved us**." Our Creator initiates a loving relationship with His children, and in response His obedient children respond by reciprocating His love. Note that this discussion is related to the great principle of Sanctification by Love. Be it called Atonement by Love, Sanctification by Love, or even Reconciliation by Love, it's our Creator's essence and nature to love all His children with all His heart, with all His soul, and with all His mind. Never underestimate the power and glory of our Holy Father's love.

There's one more event from Jesus' life and teachings that further reinforces the concept that God's love for His children creates the path for His children's atonement. But first, let's recall Jesus' teaching to love your enemies and pray for them. This story is included in Section 4.9 and the section is titled "The Gospel of Love." I'll repeat the verses of interest (Matthew 5: 43 – 46) for the reader's convenience. Jesus is speaking.

*"You have heard that it was said you shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy. But I say to you, **love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, in order that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven;** for He causes His sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous; **for if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax-gatherers do the same?"***

Now, please consider this question. Did Jesus ever demonstrate the practice of loving His enemies and praying for them? I believe the answer is yes, and it occurred during His crucifixion as recorded in Luke 23: 34. In the mist of Jesus' horrific torture, He lovingly prays to His Father to forgive these disobedient and evil children of humanity. Here's the verse.

**"Father, forgive them; for they do not know what they are doing."**

Is Jesus' prayer to His Father a prelude to the essence and nature of spiritual atonement? Can the quality of mercy be better refined than what's expressed by Jesus' love for all children of humanity? Can the quantity of forgiveness be increase beyond Jesus' demonstration of His perfect love. And can the Holy Father's gracious act of loving reconciliation create anything less than total atonement for His wayward children who harbor just an iota of hope, or a glimmer of faith, or a twinkle of true, sincere and genuine love? Hope shall endure. Faith shall preserver. And love shall prevail.

Lastly, in my reflections I've come to believe all sentient human beings definitely need to improve their relationships with one another as well as with our gracious Creator. What mankind really needs is to improve our ability to be **attuned** to our Creator's desires, His preferences, His instructions, His wisdom, and especially His perfect love. The word "**attune**" means: (1)to adjust; and (2) to bring into accord, harmony, and sympathetic relationships. While I had never heard of the theological concept of attunement in my early years of adulthood, I happened to become aware of the concept in my later years of adulthood. In my reflections I have found the concept of attunement more meaningful and significant than the theological concept of atonement. Nevertheless, I truly admire both concepts, and I believe both concepts should be embraced as attainable goals for all People of Faith. Please reflect upon this discussion. What great attribute of love and life should mankind need in order to attain loving relationships with God and one another? Should it be the doctrine of atonement, the doctrine of attunement, or both.

How does a person attune himself/herself with God all Mighty? There are two ways. The first way is by prayer and meditation (recall PSE1's); which are easier to achieve than most people realize. The second way is by spiritual contact from our Creator or one of His emissaries (recall PSE2's and PSE3's). It's impossible to overestimate the power and wonder of prayer and meditation. This takes practice, dedication and commitment to "tune in" and to "fine tune" with your loving Creator. This is especially true of mediation. There are a lot of good DVD's, books and public programs that'll teach you the best ways to meditate.

Now, here's another important element to consider. Many people perceive themselves as being a servant to God; or even worse, they perceive themselves as being a slave (also called a bond slave) to God. The Children of God are not God's servants, and especially we're not His slaves. As within every loving family, the children assist, help and collaborate with their father. John F. Kennedy might have said it this way: "Ask not what your Loving Father can do for you, but ask what you can do for your Loving Father." Teddy Roosevelt had these encouraging words: "Do what you can with what you have and were you are." We are a truly blessed created beings, and our Creator has a very special purpose for us. Of course

this purpose is concealed to mankind during our earthly journey, but it shall surely be revealed in the world-to-come. Always believe and think with a positive, proactive and optimistic outlook and disposition. Never doubt the truth that God loves you with a love that's beyond your ability to comprehend.

**Our Heavenly Father, the Lord of Life  
who is always gracious, benevolent and loving,  
your earthly children are not worthy of being in  
your presence; but by the power of your loving  
grace, would you please accept us as we are?**

**Atonement + Attunement = Attainment**

### **Why Did Jesus Die?**

Please carefully and without bias consider the following question. Was Jesus truly sacrificed for the forgiveness of mankind's sins? And of course this forgiveness of sins is predicated upon the individual truly believing Jesus is the only begotten Son of God the Father, and only through Jesus' sacrifice can a believer obtain spiritual salvation. I've read that Christ's death on the cross is the very heart and soul of the Christian faith. I know this is adamantly believed by many devout traditional Christians, and I too once believed it and taught it. However, I no longer personally agree with this statement. I believe Jesus' resurrection from death is the very heart and soul of the Christian faith. At least, this is true for me, and I'm confident many other Christians also believe this is true. **The heart of my Christian faith is in the living and loving Jesus and not in the sacrificed and dead Jesus.**

How strong would Christian faith be today if we didn't have reasonable, historical testimonies of Jesus' resurrection? Jesus' resurrection is the proof-in-the-pudding regarding the truth of Jesus' life and teachings. The fact of Jesus' resurrection creates a sensible, reasonable and rational faith that there is spiritual life after physical death. There is a world-to-come, and I believe it's the Kingdom of Love. The sons and daughters of humanity who consistently exercise unconditional love shall find acceptance and comfort in the Kingdom of Love, but those who consistently exercise conditional love shall not be comfortable in the Kingdom of Love, and they shall therefore refuse the Kingdom of Love.

So then, if the concept of substitutionary atonement is only a deep-seated, internal drive of Jesus' first followers, then why did Jesus die? Here are the results of my reflections. I'm also sure the readers could add some additional possibilities.

1. Could He have avoided physical death if He had chose to do so?
2. Did Jesus die so He could experience what a sentient human being experiences when he or she dies; and therefore, to know the human fear, anxiety, pain and suffering of physical death?
3. Did Jesus die because it was the only way he could free Himself from His earthly avatar?
4. Or did Jesus die simply because His Heavenly Father asked Him to die, and thus dying for reasons which are only known to the Heavenly Father?
5. Did Jesus die because He was willing to give the greatest love of all? Do you remember what the greatest love of all is? "Greater love has no Sentient Being that He who willing lays down His life so that His Children of Humanity may live, love, contribute and prosper in the Kingdom of Love."
6. Did Jesus live and die so that He could reveal to mankind the reality and mystery of the Holy Trinity; and thus personally demonstrate our Creator's infinite love, mercy, forgiveness and reconciliation? Is it possible that Jesus had to die in order for the in-dwelling of the Holy Spirit to occur?
7. Finally and most importantly, did Jesus die so that He could then be resurrected, and thus prove to the Children of Humanity that there is spiritual life after physical death. O' Angel of Death, where now is your sting?

In our terrestrial realm there are many questions while there are very few answers. Only our Creator's perfect love can reconcile all of mankind, and thus provide some sense out of the human dilemma. Meanwhile, all Christians should make it their heavenly duty – and without any conditions – to obey Jesus' new commandment. "***Love one another just as I have loved you.***" True salvation begins with a true and internalized hope that mankind's Creator really does exist and that He is the essence and nature of perfect love. This I firmly believe that a person only needs an iota of spiritual hope, and that iota of hope is sufficient for God to embrace and welcome His hopeful child home to His Mansion of Love. Remember what the apostle Paul said. "*For now we see in a mirror dimly, but then face to face; now I know in part, but then I shall know fully just as I also have been fully known.*"

## **4.12 The Holy Trinity, The Unforgivable Sin and Prevenient Grace**

---

There are three very important Christian doctrines which every Christian should understand. Each doctrine is very powerful in itself, but their power is greatly multiplied by their dynamic relationships. These three doctrines are the Holy Trinity, the unforgivable sin, and prevenient grace. Consider this information very carefully because your personal beliefs on these matters may alter your life. Reflect upon the impact of unconditional love in each one of these doctrines.

### **The Holy Trinity**

Previously in Section 2.5 titled “What Is This Word “God?,” I addressed some personal reflections regarding the concepts, attributes and characteristics of mankind’s Creator. I specifically addressed a some concepts about the Holy Trinity in a subsection titled “God and the Holy Trinity.” My discussion focused upon purely personal reflections and sensations about the great mystery of the Trinity. I’ll now provide some theological information I obtained in my pursuits to better understand the Trinity. The first question to consider is this. Is Christianity a monotheistic religion or a polytheistic religion? After all, there’s God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. That sounds like three Gods to me, and that’s the official position taken by Judaism and Islam. On the other hand, Christian theologians adamantly believe and teach Christianity is a monotheistic religion. Accordingly, each figurehead is a separate manifestation of the one God. There are three distinct manifestations, but each manifestation is consubstantial; that is, having the same substance, the same essence, and the same nature. However, while each manifestation is consubstantial, each manifestation also has three different properties. One of the best analogies is in reference to water. Water always remains to be water – two hydrogen atoms and one oxygen atom. However, water can be manifested as a liquid, or as a solid (ice), or as a gas (steam). In a similar manner each manifestation of the Trinity has a unique property.

As a divine doctrine of the Christian Church, it’s deeply believed all things are from the Father, through the Son, and in the Holy Spirit. The doctrine of the Holy Trinity is also presented this way. It is the Father who generates, the Son who is begotten, and the Spirit who proceeds. It’s also said that each manifestation of our Creator is co-equal and co-eternal. I especially liked the way Martin Luther explains the Trinity. “The Father creates, the Son redeems, and the Spirit sanctifies, a divine unity with separate personalities.”

The word “Trinity” is not in the Bible, nor are the concepts of the Trinity explicitly addressed in the Bible. Bible scholars have interpreted many Old Testament verses that foreshadow the concept of the Trinity, but I know of no explicit verses that describe the concept of the Trinity. Even in the New Testament there are no explicit descriptions concerning the Trinity. However, Jesus extensively addresses His Heavenly Father and the Spirit of God. The gospel of John especially includes many elements that are associated with the Trinity, especially including concepts about the Holy Spirit being mankind’s Helper and Comforter. In my search I only found two Biblical verses that address all three entities of the Trinity in the same verse. The first is from Jesus as recorded in Matthew 28: 19: “*Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit.*” This of course is known as the Great Commission. The second verse is from Paul, 2 Corinthians 13: 14 – “*The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit, be with you all.*” This verse has been called the Apostolic Blessing.

I sincerely believe our magnificent Divinity is a very powerful Creator Being and He can manifest Himself in whatever form He desires. He could be a burning bush that’s not consumed by its fire. He could be a dove descending from heaven. Or He could simply be a voice from the sky. In my own way of thinking, I believe the Holy Trinity provides and fulfills the omnificent nature of God. As a single unity bonded by their loving nature, the Holy Trinity is omnificent (all creative). But as individual manifestations, the Heavenly Father is omniscient (all knowing), the Son is omnipotent (all powerful), and the Holy Spirit is omnipresent (all present). I personally find this perspective of the Trinity very comforting and assuring because it makes our Creator invulnerable, indestructible and undefeatable. I’m sure there are many Christians who disagree with my personal perspective and would like to debate me in the matter. Needless to say, the doctrine, explanation and understanding of the Holy Trinity has been debated and argued ever since Christianity’s foundation. And naturally speaking, these debates and arguments continue today. Let all Christians actively exercise three of the greatest attributes of love, these three attributed being patience, kindness and tolerance.

## **The Unforgivable Sin**

Jesus’ life and teachings about the unforgivable sin is one of the most uplifting spiritual revelations in the entire Bible. And let me quickly add that there would be no unforgivable sin if the Holy Trinity didn’t first exist. **Jesus defines the unforgivable sin is blasphemy against the Holy Spirit**. The word “**blasphemy**” means: (1) impious utterance or action concerning God or sacred things; (2) the crime of assuming to oneself the rights or qualities of God; and (3) irreverent behavior toward anything held sacred. I once read an article which stated blasphemy against God is also considered to be an abuse of God and His

loving nature. The word “**abuse**” is defined as: (1) to use wrongly, improperly, or to misuse; (2) to treat in a harmful, injurious, or offensive way; and (3) wrong or improper use, or to misuse. I should also note that this topic is often addressed as “the unpardonable sin.” However, the phrases “unpardonable sin” and “unforgivable sin” are not even used in the Bible. Jesus actually defines the unforgivable sin as “an eternal sin.”

The discussion of the unforgivable sin only occurs in three passages of the Bible, and each time the message is addressed by Jesus. These three passages will be discussed individually. Meanwhile, it should be noted that the doctrine of blasphemy was already well established in the Jewish religion during Jesus' earthly mission. The story is similar in the gospels of Matthew and Mark. Jesus was tried and found guilty by the Jewish leaders for “the crime of blasphemy against God.” In this story, the high priest Caiaphas and his associates of scribes and elders first tried to obtain false testimony to convict Jesus, but the various false testimonies were so inconsistent that even the Jewish leaders couldn't find Jesus guilty. Then out of desperation Caiaphas directly asks Jesus: “*I adjure You by the living God, that You tell us whether You are the Christ, the Son of God.*” According to Matthew 26: 26, Jesus replied: “*You have said it yourself; nevertheless I tell you, hereafter you shall see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven.*” According to Mark 14: 62, Jesus replied: “*I am; and you shall see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of Power, and coming with the clouds of heaven.*” Caiaphas dramatically responds by tearing his clothes and saying, “*You have heard the blasphemy. How does it seem to you?*” The entire Jewish court found Jesus guilty of blasphemy and condemned Him to death.

This is how wicked and malicious blasphemy against God was to the Jewish religion. But on the other hand and in accordance with the Old Testament laws, adultery and homosexuality are equally wicked and malicious and deserving of death. To complete the story, Jesus was quickly crucified, died while nailed to His cross, and then three days later He was resurrected. I wonder if Jesus – while in His resurrected body – appeared before any of the men who convicted Him of blasphemy. Each of the three synoptic gospels contains a story of Jesus addressing the unforgivable sin. The background story in each gospel is different. Here are the three stories.

### **The Unforgivable Sin From Matthew 12: 25 –32**

The Jewish leaders sent some Pharisees to watch and observe Jesus with the intent to gather testimony so that Jesus could be accused of breaking Jewish law. This was a Sabbath day and Jesus was healing people in need. He healed a man with a severely withered hand. Then He encountered a demon-possessed man who was blind and dumb, and in His great compassion He healed this man. There also

was a multitude of people who witnessed these miracles, and they were naturally amazed. Some people starting asking if Jesus was the Son of David? The Pharisees replied by saying that Jesus' power was from Beelzebul, the ruler of the demons. This was a very serious position for the Pharisees, and it had great potential danger for Jesus and His disciples. In spite of Jesus' compassion and His miraculous powers which the Pharisees witnessed, their hearts and minds were set against Jesus, and they stubbornly refuse to believe what they saw. This is Jesus' response to the Pharisees.

*Any kingdom divided against itself is laid waste; and any city or house divided against itself shall not stand. And if Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself. How then shall his kingdom stand? And if I by Beelzebul cast out demons, by whom do your sons cast them out? Consequently they shall be your judges. **But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you.** Or how can anyone enter the strong man's house and carry off his property, unless he first binds the strong man? And then he will plunder his house. He who is not with Me is against Me; and he who does not gather with Me scatters. **Therefore I say to you, any sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven men, but blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven. And whoever shall speak a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever shall speak against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, either in this age, or in the age to come.**"*

### **The Unforgivable Sin From Mark 3: 23 –29**

In this story Jesus just chose His twelve disciples who are now with Jesus on the top of a mountain. There's no information about how long they were on the mountain, but eventually Jesus and His disciples returned to Jesus' home. There is no specific stories about Jesus healing people and casting out demons, but it's obvious from the story that these events happened. In Mark's story it was scribes who followed Jesus around in order to obtain testimony against Him. Without any clarifying information, the verse defines the scribes say, "*Jesus is possessed by Beelzebul, and He casts out the demons by the ruler of the demons.*" This is Jesus' response to the scribes.

*How can Satan cast out Satan? And if a kingdom is divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house is divided against itself, that house will not be able to stand. And if Satan has risen up against himself and is divided, he cannot stand, but he is finished! But no one can enter the strong man's house and plunder his property unless he first binds the strong man, and then he will plunder his house. Truly I say to you, all sins shall be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they utter; but whoever blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is guilty of an eternal sin.*

### **The Unforgivable Sin From Luke 12: 8 –10**

In Luke's story, Jesus is teaching His disciples about the hypocrisy of the Pharisees, but it also appears there was a multitude of people (many thousands) present to hear Jesus' teachings. There are no miracles in this story, and there are no Pharisees or scribes seeking to snare Jesus. There's a discontinuity in the entire passage. In the middle of His discourse Jesus says the following message.

*And I say to you, everyone who confesses Me before men, the Son of Man shall confess him also before the angels of God; but he who denies Me before men shall be denied before the angels of God. And everyone who will speak a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but he who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him.*

These three Biblical passages provide the best information available regarding the concept of the unforgivable sin. I provided all three passages so the reader is knowledgeable of the content and background of the available data. So then, what do you think is the true meaning of the unforgivable sin? I believe Jesus' description is a literal statement of the Cosmic Truth and is to be taken in a direct and sensible manner. It's very clear to me, as defined in these three passages, all sins which mankind can commit are forgivable except for one very specific sin. And of course, that sin is blasphemy against the Holy Spirit. Based upon this truthful doctrine of the Cosmos, it is crystal clear to me that our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator allows many paths to Himself and His Kingdom of Love. The heart of God is opened to all Children of Humanity who truly desire to have a loving and living relationship with Him. Our Creator's grace and benevolence is light years beyond the human capacity to comprehend, and I'm

totally baffled why this perspective of God hasn't be realized, accepted, embraced and taught in the entire Christian Church. In my deepest reflections, I've come to realize several related facets to this great truth.

1. Our Creator doesn't care what manmade religious affiliation a person has. All human made religions are imperfect and contain inadvertent, human errors. Our Creator's criteria is short and simple. **Do you truly love your gracious, benevolent Creator and all of your sentient brothers and sisters?**

**God Is Truth: If you love and pursue the Truth, then you also love and pursue God.**

**God Is Love: If you embrace and exercise Love, then you also embrace and exercise your love for God.**

**God Is Life: If you desire and long for Life, then you also desire and long for God.**

2. A person's potential of total enlightenment is not limited to this world. If you bash Jesus in this life, you are not yet judged. If you condemn Jesus in this life, you're still not yet judged. And if you blasphemy against Jesus in this life, once again you're not yet judged. Such unloving actions against Jesus still have the potential of being forgiven. Also, remember Paul's teaching that we now see life and truth as if we're looking through a dim mirror. But in the world-to-come, the Cosmic Truth shall be crystal clear. We shall also be totally transparent, thus showing all of our flaws, imperfections and sins. Therefore, beware of all your character weaknesses and rectify them. But most important, uncover all of your character flaws, and totally reject them and eject them from the very source of your being. The reality of Jesus as the Lord of Love shall be definitively known to all in the world-to-come, and all of the truly enlightened children of mankind shall rightfully and reverently bow before Him, knowing deeply that He loves them just as the Heavenly Father loves them. Again I say, if there is just an iota of hope for a wayward Child of Humanity, our gracious and benevolent Creator shall embrace His hopeful child and shall celebrate His precious child's homecoming.

3. What has just been said about Jesus also applies to the Heavenly Father. You may blaspheme against the Holy Father, and this incredulous, dreadful and treasonous sin still has the potential of being forgiven. Truly and surely, our benevolent Creator's mercy has no boundaries.
4. This divine and merciful dispensation of our Creator – that is, His divine ordering of the affairs of His Cosmos – is absolutely breath taking! But who do you think is the most thankful for our Creator's infinite love – the loving and obedient Christian in his glowing state of enlightenment, or the wayward Child of God whose enlightenment is barely dim because he blasphemed against the Holy Father and the Son of God? As Jesus taught His believers, “to whom much has been given, much is required.” Nevertheless, our Creator's divine policy in regards to His method of loving salvation is His prerogative and His sovereign right. Many conservative Christians believe God's effectiveness and efficiency – in regards to the percentage of people saved – is very low, being less than 25 percent of all the people on earth. I can't begin to believe this is true. Our loving Creator is much bigger and better than this. I believe our Creator's effectiveness and efficiency are very, very high.
5. There's a parable in the gospel of Matthew that has always impressed me. I personally believe the parable is related to the concepts of God's mercy and forgiveness. The story has been given the title “Laborers in the Vineyard,” and it's found in Matthew 20: 1 – 16. This passage provides an example of how a true believer who comes late in the acceptance of God's true kingdom receives the same reward as the true believer who came early in the acceptance of God's true kingdom. The meaning of the last line has always baffled me.

*For the kingdom of heaven is like a landowner who went out early in the morning to hire laborers for his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the laborers for a denarius for the day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour and saw others standing idle in the market place; and to those he said; “Your too go into the vineyard, and whatever is right I will give you.” And so they went. Again he went out about the sixth and the ninth hour, and did the same thing. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing; and he said to them; “Why have you been standing here idle all day long?” They said to him; “Because no one hired us.” He said to them; “You too go into the vineyard.” And when evening had come, the owner of the vineyard said to his foreman; “Call the laborers and pay them their wages, beginning with the last group to the first.” And when those hired about the eleventh hour came, each one received a*

*denarius. And when those hired first came, they thought that they would receive more; and they also received each one a denarius. And when they received it, they grumbled at the landowner, saying; “These last men have worked only one hour, and you have made them equal to us who have borne the burden and the scorching heat of the day.” But he answered and said to one of them; “Friend, I am doing you no wrong; did you not agree with me for a denarius: Take what is yours and go your way, but I wish to give to this last man the same as to you. Is it not lawful for me to do what I wish with what is my own? Or is your eye envious because I am generous?” Thus the last shall be first, and the first last.*

6. While I could provide several scripture passages that relate to the forgiveness of sins, I will share just one more. This passage is John 21: 15 through 17, and concerns Peter’s painful reconciliation with Jesus. Remember Peter denied Jesus three times before the cock crowed on the morning after the night Jesus was arrested. Jesus also foretold the disciples Peter would deny Him three times before the cock crowed. And finally, we need to keep in mind the verse of The Unforgivable Sin From Luke 12: 8 through 10.

***And I say to you, everyone who confesses Me before men, the Son of Man shall confess him also before the angels of God; but he who denies Me before men shall be denied before the angels of God. And everyone who will speak a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but he who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him.***

Poor old Peter! He knows by experience that God’s perfect love can even forgive the sin of blasphemy of the Son of God. But what else is absolutely fascinating is that blasphemy of the Holy Father can also be forgiven of mankind. How can this be? What is now important is that we have a wonderful glimpse of the abundant love and compassion of our Heavenly Father. Now consider Peter’s most precious moment of Jesus’ loving reconciliation with Peter. Also, keep in mind that if Peter’s disobedience has been forgiven – especially in light of the fact that Peter saw and experienced the healing and loving power and glory of Jesus – then there isn’t anyone’s disobedience that can’t also be forgiven.

## **John 21: 15–17**

*So when they had finished breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter; “Simon, son of John, do you love Me more than these?” Peter said to Him; “Yes, Lord. You know that I love you.” Jesus said to him; “Tend My lambs.” Jesus said to him again a second time; “Simon, son of John, do you love Me?” Peter said to Him; “Yes, Lord. You know that I love you.” Jesus said to him; “Shepherd My sheep.” Jesus said to him the third time; “Simon, son of John, do you love Me?” Peter was grieved because Jesus said to him the third time; “Do you love Me?” And Peter said to Him; “Lord, you know all things. You know that I love You.” Jesus said to him; “Tend My sheep.”*

Finally, there's one last very important element to address about the unforgivable sin. If you're concerned, anxious and bewildered about your personal blasphemy of the Holy Spirit, then don't be anxious and worried any longer. People who abuse the Holy Spirit have no concern or anxieties in regards to their personal spiritual salvation. Such people truly don't give a damn about God in any form of His manifestations. But those people who worry about their personal blasphemy of the Holy Spirit are only at the beginning of their journey of faith. Your faith is childlike. You must simply grow to full maturity in your hope, your faith and your love. And before you know it, you too shall be attending Jesus' sheep! Be of good faith, and love your gracious and benevolent Creator with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. And in a similar manner, love your neighbor as yourself. If you do this, then you're obeying all the commandments of God, and by doing this, then you truly are justified by faith and sanctified by love. Welcome to the true family of our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator.

## **Prevenient Grace**

The Christian doctrine of prevenient grace is probably the least known doctrine of the Christian Church. There are some Protestant denominations that disagree with the doctrine; but then, there are many doctrines that are in disagreement between competing denominations. That's why there're so many denominations that grew out of Christianity's First Reformation. Here's some of the important descriptions and history regarding prevenient grace.

1. “**Prevenient grace**” is defined as “the divine grace that operates on the human will prior to the will reverently turning to God.” For the Children of God who respond to His gift of prevenient grace, they will one day reflect upon the event and describe it as a most critical decision at a most mysterious moment in time. An embryo of spiritual essence has just been conceived, and that event shall now develop to one’s spiritual birth.
2. Prevenient grace has also been defined as “the divine grace that precedes human decision in regards to the existence of God and the loving sacrifice of Jesus.”
3. John Wesley (1703 – 1791), who was the founder of the Methodist movement and the most prominent champion of prevenient grace, defined it as “the grace that goes before grace.”
4. Wesley also addressed prevenient grace in this manner. “Prevenient grace elicits within the human heart the first wish to please God, the first dawn of light concerning His will, and the first slight transient conviction of having sinned against Him.”
5. The United Methodist Book of Discipline defines prevenient grace as “the divine love that surrounds all humanity and precedes any and all of our conscious impulses.” Accordingly, the doctrine of prevenient grace is a big thing in the Methodist church.
6. I should also note that John Wesley was highly influenced by Jacobus Arminius (1560 – 1609), a Dutch theologian who was actively involved in the First Reformation. He was originally a Calvinist but broke away from them primarily over the doctrine of prevenient grace.
7. John Wesley was also in heated debates with the Calvinist over the concept of prevenient grace. Wesley clarified his concept of prevenient grace by claiming that God initiates salvation through prevenient grace, and while human beings still maintain God-given free-will to respond to that initiative, salvation is still initiated and ultimately activated by God through justifying grace.

I’ve seriously and diligently contemplated and reflected upon the concepts of prevenient grace, and I’ve come to believe prevenient grace is a real spiritual condition. For me personally, prevenient grace is our gracious Creator’s whisper that calls everyone to come and find Him, and to be a collaborator in His Kingdom of Love.

*Be still and know that I am! Seek me out and you shall surely find me! If you really want to know, then all you have to do is ask! And if you want to enter into my Mansion of Love, then all you have to do is knock upon my door!*

All a person has to do is use his or hers spiritual institution, and you do that simply by praying and meditating. If you're sincere in your search for God, then you shall not be disappointed. Meanwhile, consider this very important question. What is the source from which the whisper of God emanates? Recall the previous discussion about the ember of our gracious Creator; that is, the ember of God that makes man a sentient human being. I deeply believe the ember of God is the dynamic source of His prevenient grace. Without the ember of God there would be no prevenient grace. Now, what do you think is the process by which spiritual enlightenment is achieved? Here are my personal reflections to this great question.

### **First, the Seeds of Hope**

The usual path of enlightenment, but not necessarily the only path, first leads you to the spiritual substance of hope. Hope is always the beginning of enlightenment, and if it's sincerely pursued, then you shall find **The Great Hope**. And that Great Hope is your deep-seated desire that mankind's Creator really does exist and that His essence and nature is love. Realize your desire for God to exist is actually your hope that God really does exist. Surely and truly, it is very wise to saturate yourself with Hope! Finally, as your Seeds of Hope germinate, grow and mature, slowly but surely, the Flower of Faith appears one sunny day.

### **Second, the Flowers of Faith**

As your hope grows, so does your confidence, your assurance, and your conviction in the living reality of your loving Creator. Surely but slowly, one quite day you realize you now have a living faith that God really does exist, and He has this immense concern for your well-being. You now know beyond any doubts that your Creator truly love you. The is **The Great Faith** that your gracious and benevolent Creator truly does love you. Once again, your confidence, your assurance, and your conviction are at an all time high. You're now feeding upon the spiritual substance of mature faith. It should also be noted that the Bible includes a definition of faith, whereby the connection between hope and faith is defined. This definition is from Hebrews 11: 1 – “**Now, faith is the assurance of things hoped for, the conviction of things not seen.**”

### **Third, the Fruits of Love**

But wait! Your spiritual path of enlightenment isn't over yet. You're now in a position to have a new spiritual revelation. Because God first loved you, you can now love God and your fellow sentient sisters and brothers. Love begets love, and because God's love is perfect, you're naturally amazed and honestly grateful for your Creator's love. Once again, your confidence, your assurance, and your conviction grow beyond your conception. You can't even think about life without your precious Creator. This is **The Great Love** that our gracious and benevolent Creator's love is perfect, and His perfect love is actively concerned about your ultimate satisfaction, your ultimate security, and your ultimate development. Having internalized the true and deep meaning of the Creator's perfect love, you find yourself loving Him with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. And in a similar manner, you realize you truly love your fellow sentient human beings just as much as you love yourself. Finally, as your Fruits of Love grow and mature, there is born within each Fruit of Love an abundance of the Seeds of Hope. While love begets love, love also begets hope. Finally, because The Great Love is perfect love, The Great Love casts out all fears.

This interrelated process of these three spiritual substances of hope, faith and love establishes the cycle of mankind's spiritual reality. Hope produces faith. Faith produces love. And love produces hope. Surely and truly, hope, faith and love, these three spiritual substances provide and sustain all your spiritual needs and cravings. But never forget that of these three, love is the greatest. Therefore, seek to become the substance of love. In other words, become the personification of love, just as our Holy Creator is the personification of love. It's noted that I use the word "**personification**" to mean "the essence, nature and ability of a sentient being to become the living embodiment of an abstract concept or idea." Therefore, emulate your Creator to the very best of your ability. And if you do this, then you emulate love. In addition, you then become your Creator's Advocate of Love! How awesome is that. Is there anything better than being your Creator's Advocate of Love? Now, let's stop and think about this spiritual concept of salvation. Is becoming an Advocate of Love what you call salvation?

1. If you're not a Christian, but if you truly and deeply love your gracious and benevolent Creator as determined by the dictates of your conscience – and you thereby become an Advocate of Love – **then is He going to reject you? Not if He's the living personification of perfect love.**
2. If you're a Christian but you don't believe in the concept of the justification by faith, and you also truly and deeply love your gracious and benevolent Creator – and thereby become an Advocate of Love – **then is He going to reject you? Not if He's the living personification of perfect love.**

3. If you're a Christian but you don't believe in the concept of substitutionary atonement, and you also truly and deeply love your gracious and benevolent Creator— and thereby become an Advocate of Love – **then is He going to reject you? Not if He's the living personification of perfect love.**

Let true, sincere and genuine love be the motivating force in all you believe, in all you think, in all you say, and in all you do. Thereby, your sentient brothers and sisters will define your character as being the essence and nature of true, sincere and genuine love. In fact, all of your sentient brothers and sisters shall recognize you as being an Advocate of Love. And that's a very, very good thing!

### **4.13 The Three Divisions of the Will of God**

How do you recognize and comprehend the will of God? This is man's greatest task of the millenniums, requires great care and patience, and is often immersed in doubt. Nevertheless, great personal understanding and comfort is gained by first seeking our Creator's will. Every truly spiritually activated sentient human being actively desires to fulfill the will of God. Therefore, it's well worth your efforts and diligence to seek, understand and fulfill the will of God. And know this. Your ultimate and greatest happiness is dependent upon you fulfilling your gracious Creator's will, for His blessings come from intentionally fulfilling His will. And in a nutshell, God's will is totally and completely defined in the Law of Love. What a wonderful and magnificent paradise earth would be if all of mankind would only do our Creator's will on earth as it's done in heaven.

One of the best books I've ever read was about the will of God. This is a very little book, being only 4" by 7" with 64 pages. The book's title is "The Will of God," and it's written by an English minister named Leslie D. Weatherhead. The book was first published in 1944, that being at the height of World War II and not a good time to live in England, especially London. Naturally, the whole Christian world was at a spiritual loss trying to understand the will of God. How could a perfect loving God allow the pain, suffering, misery, death and destruction of such a great war as World War II? In response to the congregation's suffering and their need for spiritual comfort and understanding, Leslie Weatherhead prepared five talks on the will of God. Weatherhead defined that God's will operates on three divisions or dimensions: (1) the intentional will of God; (2) the circumstantial will of God, which has also been called the permissive will of God; and (3) the ultimate will of God.

1. **The Intentional Will of God:** Our Creator's intentional will is always founded upon His perfect love. He wants all of His creation to be fulfilled and satisfied, and always resulting in goodness and righteousness. God's intentional will is His ideal purpose. He wants all of His children to be happy and fulfilled with a

sense of total satisfaction; to be safe and fulfilled with a sense of total security; and to grow and be fulfilled with a sense of total development. However, our Creator does not want slaves, robots, or automatons who operate without free-will and the ability to truly love Him and to love one another. Consequently, He creates all of His sentient beings with the gift of free-will. And this condition creates the rub with our loving Creator's intentional will. All sentient beings are free to choose true-love or antilove. Thereby, God allows all of His creation to be selfish, abusively domineering, and even evil if that's what they really want. God so loves His creation that He always gives them the desires of their heart, even if those desires are counterproductive to His intentional will.

2. **The Circumstantial Will of God:** The existence of evil is only allowed as a result of our Creator's circumstantial will. He does not like evil; in fact, He totally despises evil. Nevertheless, He must allow evil to exist in order for His good and obedient creation to have the gift of free-will. Evil is the price paid in order to have sentient-love and sentient-freedom. In addition, evil comes in an abundance. There're religious fanatics, random mass murders, malevolent dictators, the lust for money, the lust for social power, atheism, hedonism, apathy, mental and psychological disorders, and on and on. Furthermore, God's circumstantial will must also be allowed in association with mankind's physical frailty and vulnerability. The Law of Fate causes much pain and suffering in our terrestrial world. Consider all the pain and suffering that Mother Nature causes – tornadoes, hurricanes, droughts, floods, earth quacks, tsunamis, lighting strikes, starvation, epidemics, and so on and so on. Surely and truly, these physical events are not the intentional will of our loving Creator. Nonetheless, He has to allow The Law of Fate to have its way within the physical realm. It should also be realized that The Law of Fate involves the irrational and impersonal character of physical occurrences. The Law of Fate is indifferent and without malice, for as the winner of the Mega Million Lottery said, The Law of Fate was very kind and fortunate to him. When all is said and considered in regards to the circumstantial will of God, all is not lost or without recourse. God is yet to exercise His ultimate will. Always remember, all things work to good for those who truly, sincerely and genuinely love their most gracious and benevolent Creator.
3. **The Ultimate Will of God:** What our Holy Father wills is always ultimately achieved. In His Kingdom of Love, evil cannot exist. In fact, evil doesn't even want to enter our Creator's Kingdom. That's because the Kingdom of Love is repulsive, revolting, repugnant and disgusting to the children of evil darkness. For evil entities, heaven is extremely uncomfortable while hell is extremely comfortable. In our gracious and benevolent Creator's world-to-come, love rues the hearts and souls of all who dwell there. Lastly, it's very important to know and realize that God's ultimate will is His sole responsibility, authority and sovereignty. You can be totally confident that our loving Creator welcomes

and embraces all His children who willfully and actively seek to be a loving member of His great Cosmic family. This is true regardless of what a person's earthly religious affiliation may have been. Our loving Creating never measures a person by his or hers religious affiliation; but instead, He measures His children by their ability and capacity to truly love.

#### **4.14 Why Is Blasphemy Against The Holy Spirit Unforgivable?**

---

Recall the previous discussion regarding the ember of God which is a symbiotic element of the sentient human being. This discussion is addressed in Section 4.11 titled "God's Perfect Love Versus Ancient Mankind's Fears, Superstitions and Ritual Sacrifices." Also, recall the discussion that the ember of God is the source of mankind's prevenient grace. The key function of prevenient grace is to lead God's human children to spiritual activation. The concept of spiritual activation was first discussed in Section 3.2 and under the subsection titled "Sentient Human Beings and Spiritual Activation." It's recommended the reader review both of these sections.

So then, the ember of God is quietly and consistently trying to have the sentient human being open their heart to the spiritual truth. And simultaneously the Spirit of Truth, which is the Holy Spirit, is respectfully and gently awaiting for the human being to open just one door to his or hers heart. Meanwhile, the spiritual truth is found in an abundance, just patiently waiting to take root within the being of the child of God. Now, consider the child of God who never responds to the callings of prevenient grace and the precious invitations of the Holy Spirit to be the child's Helper. The constant refusal to the Holy Spirit and prevenient grace is an abuse of the Holy Spirit. This abuse of the Holy Spirit ultimately becomes blasphemy of the Holy Spirit. Consequently, this wayward child of God never becomes spiritually activated. Consequently, the indwelling of the Holy Spirit never occurs. In other words, the ultimate wayward child has never been born of the Spirit, and therefore, their spirit remains dormant. In accordance with the teachings of Jesus, these **reprobates of God** are not "born again." The word "**reprobate**" means "a depraved, unprincipled and wicked person who ultimately becomes rejected by God, and is thereby beyond the hope of spiritual salvation."

Now, there's also a second spiritual element that's occurs during the Holy Spirit's attempts to spiritually activate the child of God. Because God first loved us, we too can now love. But a person whose spirit remains dormant never possess the ability or the capacity to truly love. Their love has always been conditional, self-centered and selective. Consequently, their sin of the abuse of the Holy Spirit becomes unforgivable. It's extremely sad to even think about a wayward and

disobedient child of God who refuses to become an active participant in our Creator's Kingdom of Love. To reject our gracious Creator is to also reject His Gift of Love. And to reject our benevolent Creator is to also reject His Gift of Life. I'm sure there are many agonizing stories regarding the spiritual rejection of God, Love and Life. I hope our benevolent Creator's reconciling love has the power to reach beyond the human terrestrial experience. If this could be true, then would you be willing to march into hell for a heavenly fight? Would you do it if you could free from the bondage of hell someone you deeply and dearly love?

There is one more very important element that has not yet been addressed. **It concerns the human conscience.** The word "**conscience**" means "the sense of what is right or wrong in one's conduct or motives, impelling one towards good, right, moral and loving actions." Subsequently, the activation of one's conscience is also the true activation one's faculty of morality. Mankind needs the indwelling of the Holy Spirit in order to be a truly moral and loving person, and also to be able to properly react to the urgings of one's conscience. There is no doubt in my mind there are people who have no faculty of conscience. There are deep-seated sadists who thrive and lust on inflicting pain, suffering and misery upon other people. And the sadist element of sadism is that some sadist gain absolute political power of their country and their People. When this happens, then whole sale pain, suffering and misery is malevolently casted upon the People. In mankind's pass, this was a far more common occurrence than it is today. Mankind has truly evolved beyond his most primitive nature of animalistic behavior. Nevertheless, the children of the darkness – those who are without any conscience – create havoc upon the innocent, the weak, and the vulnerable. Here are the most evil of God's reprobates, and no one abuses the Holy Spirit more than the deep-seated sadists. The truth is, deep-seated sadists especially enjoy inflicting pain and suffering upon the most compassionate entity in our Cosmos; that is, our Holy Mother Spirit. This we know for sure. Anyone who has no faculty of conscience shall never attain spiritual enlightenment or spiritual salvation. There are no sadist in the Kingdom of Love.

I'm confident with every fiber of my being that our compassionate Creator's love reconciles all our sins, all our blemishes, all our imperfections, and all our failures. This is true provided God's child at least hopes He is real and that His essence and nature is perfect love. Our Holy Father remains to be our friend and protector provided we have opened our hearts and our minds to the symbiotic indwelling of the Holy Spirit. Even after our terrestrial life ends, we still possess the ember of God that shall enable a person to be truly enlightened. The Holy Father shall remain to be the Holy Father, no matter what any sentient human being believes. Likewise, the Holy Son shall remain to be the Holy Son no matter what any human believes.

In the world-to-come, the Love, the Power, the Glory, and the Divinity of the Holy Son shall be totally realized, and all the true, obedient children of God shall praise and worship Him. This is true no matter what your earthly religious affiliation may have been, if any. But beware you evil, wicked and wayward children of God! Your rejection and abuse of the Holy Spirit shall totally isolate and insulate you from the loving grace of your most benevolent, patient, kind and tolerant Creator. Cast off all of your evil, selfish and wicked beliefs, thoughts and actions, and then accept and embrace all the love, forgiveness and affection of your Creator – this including the love, forgiveness and affection of the Holy Father, the Holy Son, and the Holy Mother Spirit.

Finally, I know there are many Christian fundamentalists, Bible literalists, and evangelical Christians who totally and adamantly disagree with my belief regarding the sanctification of love. In response I say again, who God accepts and who God rejects is His sovereign authority, and it's not for mankind to judge his fellow brothers and sisters. One of the most profound and terrifying teachings Jesus taught is recorded in Matthew 7: 1 through 5.

*Do not judge lest you be judged. For in the way you judge, you will be judged; and by your standard of measure, it will be measured to you. And why do you look at the speck that is in your brother's eye, but do not notice the log that is in your own eye? Or how can you say to your brother, 'Let me take the speck out of your eye,' and behold, the log is in your own eye? You hypocrite, first take the log out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly to take the speck out of your brother's eye.*

No sentient human being has the right, the authority, the wisdom, and the perfection to judge another sentient human being as whether or not any child of God is worthy and acceptable to live eternally in His Kingdom of Love. Only our loving Creator has the right, the authority, the wisdom, and the perfection to judge His Children of Humanity. And I'm sure God judges each of his earthly children with a compassion that's as perfect as His love. Always remember, our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator wants His children to exercise love and compassion, and not sacrificial rituals and hypocritical judgments. Love as if your eternal life depends upon it. Because it does!

## **The Prodigal Son**

I intentionally saved the best love story in the New Testament for the end of this section regarding the Second Reformation of Christianity. This is the story of the prodigal son, and it is absolutely the best and most wonderful story ever told. I

wonder how many times Jesus shared this parable with His audiences? The story is only told in the gospel of Luke. Note that the word “love” isn’t even used in the entire story. Nevertheless, the heart of the story is all about God’s love for all of His precious children. And that especially includes you!

### **Luke 15: 11 –32: The Prodigal Son**

*Jesus said: A certain man had two sons, and the younger of them said to his father: “Father, give me the share of the estate that falls to me.” And he divided his wealth between them.*

*And not many days later, the younger son gathered everything together and went on a journey into a distant country, and there he squandered his estate with loose living. Now, when he had spent everything, a severe famine occurred in that country, and he began to be in need. And he went and attached himself to one of the citizens of that country, and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he was longing to fill his stomach with the pods that the swine were eating, and no one was giving anything to him.*

*But when **he came to his senses**, he said: “How many of my father’s hired men have more than enough bread, but I am dying here with hunger! I will get up and go to my father, and will say to him: Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in your sight; I am no longer worthy to be called your son. Make me as one of your hired men.” And he got up and came to his father. **But while he was still a long way off, his father saw him, and felt compassion for him, and ran and embraced him, and kissed him.** And the son said to him: “Father, I have sinned against heaven and in your sight; I am no longer worthy to be called your son.” But the father said to his slaves: “Quickly bring out the best robe and put it on him, and **put a ring on his hand**, and sandals on his feet. And bring the fattened calf, kill it, and let us eat and be merry; **for this son of mine was dead, and has come to life again. He was lost, and has been found.**” And they began to be merry.*

*Now, his older son was in the field, and when he came and approached the house, he heard music and dancing. And he summoned one of the servants and began inquiring what these things might be. And he said to him: “Your brother has come and your father has killed the fattened calf, because he has received him back safe and sound.” But he became angry, and was not willing to go in. And his father came out and began entreating him. But he answered and said to his father: “Look! For so many years I have been serving you, and I have never neglected a*

*command of yours. And yet you have never given me a kid, that I might be merry with my friends. But when this son of yours came, who has devoured your wealth with harlots, you killed the fattened calf for him."*

*And he said to him: "My child, you have always been with me, and all that is mine is yours. But we had to be merry and rejoice, for this brother of yours was dead and has begun to live, and was lost and has been found."*

## **Personal Reflections**

The word "**prodigal**" means: wastefully spending much more than what is necessary or wise, and thus going beyond what is deserved or justifiable. It doesn't matter if you're rich or poor to be a prodigal person. You can be foolishly wasteful with \$10 as well as \$10,000. Would you spend \$10 for a piece of Willy Wonka's bubble gum? On the other hand, prodigal wastefulness on selfish, immoral desires and lustful endeavors have a much darker content for human judgment and reaction. Most people, including Christians, would find it very difficult to welcome home a prodigal child. But then, they wouldn't have given the inheritance to the wayward child in the first place. It's very good that our gracious and benevolent Creator knows the heart of the person, thus He easily knows true remorse and repentance. Everyone needs a second chance.

This story all about the Father's joy of a returning wayward child; about His divine love; about His boundless mercy; about His limitless measure of grace; and about His infinite generosity. Here are God's trademarks: love, mercy, forgiveness, reconciliation, and redemption. Also, remember Paul's exhortation: "Nothing can separate you from God's love except yourself." Truly, the best thing we can find in this world is unconditional love, and especially our Creator's love for all His children, even His wayward prodigal sons and daughters. The true heart of this story concerns the first attribute of love which states: **True-love is actively concerned for the soulful sensations of acceptance and belonging.** When you truly love someone then you accept them just as they are. This includes all their soulful blemishes, spiritual warts, character weaknesses, and personality irritations which the person may possess. Now, this doesn't mean unloving thoughts, words, actions and character traits are acceptable. On the contrary, in the Kingdom of Love you actively desire to be the very best and most loving person you can possibly be. Always take your best and make it better. So, having been unconditionally accepted, you now find yourself belonging to the Family of God. What greater blessing could there be in all the Cosmos than having the absolute certainty that you belong in the Kingdom of Love?

In accordance to Jesus' story, the father is so happy to see his wayward son that he runs out of the house and down the road to greet the wayward son. The

father doesn't even give the son a chance to proclaim his disobedience, unworthiness, and his request just to be a servant in the father's house. But the father wouldn't have anything to do with this act of repentance. Instead, the father embraces the son, accepts the son, reestablishes the son's sensation of belonging, and makes the son feel welcomed and comfortable.

Finally, the story of the prodigal son truly is a story of hope, repentance, mercy and redemption. If you find yourself in need of unconditional love – no matter what unloving thoughts and acts you may have inflicted upon others – then dare to seek God's love. Your **hope** in the living reality of your loving Creator is where life truly begins. Step by step your **faith** shall grow, for faith is not a leap as some believe, but faith involves small, sensible and rational steps. And before you know it, you'll be producing baskets of a glorious fruit which we call **love**. You shall be known by the fruit you bear. Try it. You'll like it! Lastly, would you like to receive a Ring of Love from your great and benevolent Creator?

#### **4.15 The Church's Acceptance of Scientific Christians**

Everyone is somehow, some way and at some time a prodigal child. And we all need the sensation of love's attributes of acceptance and belonging. However, the traditional Christian Church is failing to accommodate scientifically minded believers. I truly and humbly believe the Church must evolve in accordance with the advancement of scientific knowledge and wisdom. And there is no greater knowledge or wisdom than The Knowledge and Wisdom of Love. God is perfect love, and if a person truly loves as commanded by Jesus, then such a person should be warmly welcomed into the traditional Christian Church. And this is true no matter what Christian Division a church is affiliated with. Now, I know this is not an easy decision to contemplate and to resolve. Nevertheless, if you truly love your gracious Creator, then you will gladly open your hearts, your minds, and your doors to scientific Christians. Be steadfast in love, being the true personification of love, and embracing one of love's greatest attributes – **tolerance**. To all Christian churches, if you are truly willing to accept scientific Christians into your fold, then please place a properly sized sign at a highly visible location, and inscribe on the sign the following message:

**Scientific Christians are  
gladly welcomed here!**

## Part 5

# Associated Spiritual Concepts

## 5.1 The Law of Hope

---

**The Law of Hope:** The Law of Hope is the cosmic revelation that leads to the internalized, personal desire, belief, wish or dream that the predominant forces of life are good and benevolent, and whereby life has a higher value beyond mankind's terrestrial senses and visions.

**The Great Hope:** The Great Hope is the composite hope in the living reality of: (1) the celestial realm; (2) a gracious, benevolent and loving Creator; (3) the continuum of life; (4) the powers of Cosmic Truth and Cosmic Love; and (5) the ineffable blessings in seeing the birth of your grandchildren and your great-grandchildren. Live long and prosper in the fullness of your life. This is The Great Hope.

**Hope endures.** There are three great ethereal substances that serve and sustain the celestial spirit – hope, faith and love. There's a well known Christian Bible verse that states: "But now abide faith, hope and love, these three; but the greatest of these is love." While love may be the greatest, hope is the most elementary, the most abundant, and the most enduring. I surely don't want to live in a world without love, but I especially don't want to live in a world without hope. A life without hope is a life of despair, and despair leads to cynicism, depression, sensations of doom, and other miserable states of human degradation and depravation. I truly wonder if there's any meaning, value and purpose in life if life is without any hope. Consequently, the sentient possession of hope is absolutely fundamental if you're to live life victoriously and abundantly. Truly, you must embrace hope with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.

Now, why is hope so fundamentally important? Hope leads to faith; faith leads to love; and love then plants the seeds of hope. What really comes first: hope, faith or love? I personally believe the answer varies from person to person, but most people begin with hope. I believe this is true because hope has a prerequisite association with personal belief. Before you gain the faith and confidence in what you believe, you first begin by hoping what you believe is actually true. If you stop and think about it, the trials and tribulations of life may strip away your love and shatter your faith, but as long as you sustain your hope,

your spirit remains resilient. However, when your sensation of hope is lost, then your spirit is broken and a great sense of loss is internalized. When hope is lost even the drive to live can be vanquished and a death wish then pervades the mind. Beyond any doubt, a sense of internalized hope is necessary to secure and sustain healthy emotions and a unified, optimistic mind.

As a **noun** the word “**hope**” is defined as: (1) the internal sensation that what is desired is actually possible; and (2) the internal sensation that events will turn out for the best. As a **verb** the word “**hope**” is defined as: (1) to believe, desire or trust; and (2) to internally sense that something desired will actually happen. It’s impossible to separate the substance of hope from the sentient elements of feelings, beliefs, desires and trust. Hope is a critical element of the human experience that lights the way to the realization that life is abundant in simple goodness and beauty. It’s as though there’s a cosmic force calling out for you to see the light of hope that shines throughout our Creator’s domain. There’s more to life than your external pleasures of your senses and the internal fears that dwell in your heart, especially the fear of death. Only your deep-seated sensations of hope open the doors to a satisfying and fulfilling life – a life that’s free of fear.

By the power of hope, one truth remains certain. No matter how evasive spiritual truths may be to believe and embrace, you always have the hope that The Panorama of Universal Goodness is The Cosmic Truth. If you would only open your eyes, heart and the channels of your spiritual intuition, then it’s easy to sense the simple goodness and beauty of life. Life is predominantly benevolent. Hence, the goodness and beauty of hope is also revealed. I call this one great principle of hope The Great Hope. It’s also noted your wishes, dreams and visions are forms of hope. Just to wish for something good to happen is to have a hope that something good will happen. And know this. The Great Hope enables you to endure the trials and tribulations of life. Be sure to saturate yourself with Hope! Now. hold steadfast to your hopes, for help is coming, and then your trials and tribulations shall surely end. **Hope shall endure.**

## **5.2 The Law of Faith**

---

**The Law of Faith:** The Law of Faith is the cosmic revelation that your gracious, benevolent and loving Celestial Father personally loves you very, very much, whereby He’s intricately interested in your ultimate satisfaction, your ultimate security, and your ultimate development.

**The Great Faith:** The Great Faith is the deep-seated and unwavering belief in The Law of Faith; that is, your Celestial Father truly, sincerely and genuinely loves you, and that His love for you is a perfect love. Accordingly, **always be happy**, for you are always loved by your gracious and benevolent Creator. This is The Great Faith.

**Faith perseveres.** Everyone lives by faith whether they recognize it or not. As a simple example, every time you routinely leave your home you depart with the natural intentions of returning to your home. You naturally and automatically believe you shall return. This natural belief is your daily default mode of faith, and it's also a routine and mundane act of faith. **Faith is belief, and belief is faith.** Everything you believe "you shall do" is first done as an act of faith. You hope you shall do it, and you have confidence it shall be done. But you don't really know you will do it until it's actually done. The potential is there, but the reality is a function of actuality. Hence, faith is potentiality, and it is not actuality. Nonetheless, unwavering faith confidently believes it is an actuality. Hence, it's confidently believed by the People of Faith that faith in our GBLC makes all things possible. This is a great spiritual mystery that's worth your reflections.

## **The Inner Core of Personal Faith**

Everyone has a broad perspective of general faith; that is, the outer core of personal faith. Everyone also has an inner core of personal faith. Now, many people would say that an atheist doesn't have an inner core of personal faith. But he does! The atheist's inner core of faith is based upon the sincere and conscientious personal belief that mankind's Creator does not exist. The broad perspective of faith is what you loosely believe to be true, and the inner core of personal faith is what you deeply believe to be true; that is, your deep-seated beliefs and paradigms which form the convictions of your heart. Now, some people allow external life-forces to forge the convictions of their heart. On the other hand, some people take the time and the cognitive energy to build their personalized convictions of their heart. What you believe is incredibly important, especially the inner core of your personal beliefs, which is also the inner core of your personal faith. What is the inner core of your personal faith? Here's the inner core of my personal faith, and I believe it's incredibly important for all to consider.

**The Three Foundational  
Tenets of My Personal Faith**

God is.  
God is love.  
God is perfect love.

**The True Meaning of Faith and the Living Reality of God**

The word “**faith**” is defined as: “the assurance of things hoped for, and the conviction of things not seen.” Active faith creates spiritual confidence. Like the ethereal substance of hope, the ethereal substance of faith has a cosmic origin and application, thus leading to The Law of Faith. There’s no faith more powerful than the faith that God’s ultimate love is focused upon you. Meanwhile, it’s very important to realize The Law of Faith does not concern the fundamental belief in the living reality of God. The belief in mankind’s Creator is an elementary exercise of faith, being mostly a natural exercise of human reasoning, the application of common sense, and the reverent use of one’s spiritual intuition. Of course, many people don’t believe in this statement, but People of Faith fully understand the statement and agree with the statement. Life is just too complex and pervasive to be an accidental occurrence of chaotic chance. To believe chaotic chance created life generates far more questions than believing a Super Being with immeasurable intelligence and power created life. In other words, believing life is created by a Supreme Being makes far more sense than believing life is created by chaos. The only thing chaos creates is lawlessness, destruction, desolation and death. Surely, the belief in our GBLC leads to order, direction and purpose. On the other hand, a belief in chaos only leads to more chaos.

The real challenge of faith is based upon the belief that the Cosmic Sovereign could be remotely concerned and interested in the small and mundane existence of each and every sentient human being. Isn’t God too busy running His Cosmos? How could He possibly have time and interest to be actively concerned about you and me? And does God really have the capacity and ability to be actively concerned about every sentient human being that’s scattered throughout the Cosmos? But then, don’t forget, God has legions of legions of sentient celestial beings actively helping Him. Likewise, the Cosmic Sovereign needs your personal help to accomplish His endeavors and to fulfill His intentional will. It’s critically important to realize mankind’s relationship with our Celestial Father is like the

deep, loving relationship between earthly parents and their children, except our Creator's love is far more intense. And His love is also perfect. As a Super Being, the Celestial Father has the ability and the capacity to focus His love upon every one of His children – especially including you. **Faith shall persevere.**

### **5.3 The Law of Love**

---

**The Law of Love:** The Law of Love is the cosmic proclamation to reciprocate the Creator's personal love for you. This cosmic proclamation is actually a two part, passionate invitation. **Part One:** Love your Creator with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind. **Part Two:** Love your fellow sentient human beings as yourself. We love because our Creator first loved us.

**The Great Love:** The Great Love is the Godly form of love that's exercised by our loving Creator. The Great Love is a perfect love as well as a "living love." Thereby, The Great Love becomes a state of being. Accordingly, our gracious, benevolent and loving Creator calls all His children to love in accordance with The Great Love. Finally, always remember this great truth. Because The Great Love is a perfect love, The Great Love casts out all fears.

**Love prevails.** Let us consider the Virtue of Love, which is actually a meaningful pursuit of the ethereal substance I call Cosmic Love. Let's begin by examining the dictionary definitions of the word "love." My dictionary includes several interesting definitions for the word "love." "**Love**" is defined as: (1) a strong predilection or liking for anything (such as, I love pizza and beer); (2) the affectionate concern for the well-being of others; (3) an intense and steadfast affection and devotion to a person, thus enduring loyalty; (4) a feeling of warm personal attachment and deep affection; (5) the profoundly tender or passionate affection for a person resulting in a sexual relationship; and (6) the benevolent affection of God for His creatures. Note that the word "affection" dominates these definitions. Other key words include: devotion, loyalty, **attachment**, warmth, tenderness, passion and benevolence. Other words and phrases that are not included in these definitions but are associated with the word "love" are: fondness, adoration, reverent adoration, emotional regard, friendship, romantic feelings, adulation, consecration, and worship. I've emphasized the word "attachment" because it directly relates to Love's association with "**interpersonal connection**"

and “**human bonding**.” Sentient-love attracts sentient-love and thus has a natural affinity to connect and bond people together. In turn, this leads to the concept of sentient-lovers having a “**mutual common cause**.”

Love obviously has a broadband of meaning that can be easily misunderstood. You always have to ask yourself what form of love are you talking about. The ancient Greeks tried to resolve love’s natural ambiguity by having four separate words for the English word “love.” Here’s a simplified description of the four Greek loves: (1) phileo love, which is in reference to “brotherly love;” (2) agape love, which is in reference to “godly love;” (3) storge love, which is in reference to “family love” (includes all possible relationships within the immediate family and the extended family); and (4) eros love, which is in reference to “sexual-love.” These four Greek love words are often referred as The Four Loves. While some people find little value and interest in The Four Loves – especially the professional caretakers of the soul – I personally find The Four Loves very interesting, meaningful and valuable in discerning the principles of love. In fact, the very backbone of my models of love is built upon the concepts of phileo love and agape love.

Here’s another interesting feature of The Law of Love. This law contains a third and hidden commandment that’s derived from the second part of the law: “Love your fellow sentient human beings as yourself.” The hidden commandment states: “Love yourself.” Accordingly, the second part of the law is expanded as follows: “Love your fellow sentient human beings as **you love** yourself.” This is love’s very important principle of proactive self-love. Now, here’s the basis for the derivation of this hidden commandment. How can you “love your fellow sentient human beings as yourself” if you don’t first truly love yourself? In other words, you can’t possibly love your fellow mankind as yourself if you don’t really love yourself. It’s critical to realize there’s a positive, proactive self-love that’s selfless in its very nature. Not all forms of self-love are conactive or narcissistic. It’s also noted your fellow mankind is literally all of our Celestial Father’s children, even His children who are your active enemies. By loving your enemy, you literally destroy your enemy by making him your friend. Does any rational sentient human being wage war upon his friends? Truly, the first fruit of love is friendship. Accordingly, let’s wage love – not war. Beyond any doubt in my mind, our GBLC wants us to love our enemies as well as our friends and as well as ourself.

Finally, the principle of self-love is also related to **Love’s First Maxim: Do onto others as you would have them do onto you.** This maxim is also related to The Law of Reciprocity which states that you get what you give, and you give what you get. It’s humanly natural to reciprocate what someone does for you or to you. Accordingly, love begets love, and antilove begets antilove. But it should also be noted that mankind has the insidious ability to twist and distort anything that’s good, even The Law of Love and Love’s First Maxim. As an example of the

instruction to “love your neighbor,” evil will twist this love attribute in this manner. “I’d love to love my neighbor! You ought to see the size of her melons!” And in regards to Love’s First Maxim, a healthy sentient mind would not consider applying the maxim to a masochist; that is, someone who obtains gratification from pain or some other form of deprivation, and being either self-inflicted or intentional inflicted by another person. Masochists readily exercise self-antilove. Masochists are also often associated with sadists; that is, a person who obtains gratification by inflicting pain or some other form of deprivation to another person. Too many of our fellow sentient human beings have bruised and wounded souls, thus disabling their capacity and their interest to truly love others as well as themselves. While they believe they’re unworthy, they need to learn and realize all of our Creator’s children are worthy and deserving of His perfect love. And this is also why our world needs all the Advocates of Love it can render.

## **The Law of Love and the MVP of Life**

I firmly believe The Law of Love is the very core of the meaning, value and purpose of life; that is, the MVP of Life. The happiness, joy and fulfillment of life are achieved by consistently exercising this great spiritual law. If you disregard this law, you’ll eventually harbor a death wish. Ultimately, you shall desire and embrace the totality of death and the nonexistence of oblivion. If you disregard The Law of Gravity, you face the potential consequence of terminating your terrestrial life. But if you disregard The Law of Love, then you face the potential consequence of terminating your celestial life. Why would any rational sentient human being reject the benefits of love and all of its wonderful blessings? Why would a person with a sound and healthy mind choose death over life? Why do people reject The Law of Love? In my contemplations regarding The Law of Love, I found five very important reflections that should be embraced and fully understood.

1. Mankind’s Creator Is Perfect Love: The Law of Love leads to one final conclusion: Mankind’s gracious and benevolent Creator is essence and nature of love, and His love is perfect.
2. Love Is Proactive: Like our loving Creator, love is always active as well as proactive.
3. Love Bears all Things: The power and glory of love enables you to prevail over life’s hardships, pain, suffering and misery. Love bears all things.
4. Love and Prosperity: Exercising The Law of Love leads to prosperity and abundance, which in turn leads to additional sentient responsibilities and privileges.

5. Love and Fear: Love is the only power that overcomes the emotional attacks of fear. Perfect love casts out all fears. And know this. Our Creator's agape love is perfect. When fear is conquered, then hope, faith, love and confidence reign in the hearts and minds of sentient human beings.

When you truly love your Creator and your fellow man, then the blessings of your Creator are poured upon you. This first includes spiritual blessings and then worldly blessings. The gift of worldly blessings doesn't mean you're going to become rich and prosperous, but it does mean your worldly needs shall be satisfied. I also realize this is a statement of faith as well as a test of faith, and I also know the world's prosperity is not fairly and equitably distributed. Jesus addressed this issue by noting how well our Celestial Father takes care of the birds of the sky and the lilies of the field. And then Jesus noted how much more our Celestial Father loves his Children of Humanity than He loves the birds and the lilies. When you truly love your gracious Creator and work hard to enhance His creation, then prosperity follows. Prosperity then leads to the abundance of life, which in turn empowers you to further exercise The Law of Love, especially by helping your fellow man who's in need of your help. Love and charity always go hand-in-hand. It's also noted in the original King James Bible, the English word used for "love" is the word "charity." Accordingly, it's stated: "But now abide faith, hope, and charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity." Beyond any doubt, those who love are always charitable, and a charitable person is concerned about and cares for the well-being of other people, especially the world's disadvantaged people. Compassion immediately follows, whereby one's compassion is measured by one's willful commitment and one's available resources.

## Love's Final Analysis

The Law of Love is the foundational bedrock of all my paradigms and the superstructure of all my hopes and faith. I deeply believe love is the most absolute truth known in our Creator's domain, and I embrace The Law of Love with every sentient faculty of my being. As a life-philosophy and a life-ideology, love is consistently rational and logical, and it's the only philosophy and ideology that's mutually beneficial to all sentient beings. **In the final analysis, love is the only dream I know.** If our Creator is not love, then my heart shall collapse and shatter, even to the point where I may actively embrace oblivion. What value is life if our Creator isn't the essence and nature of love? And what's the purpose of life if love doesn't reign supreme throughout the Cosmos? Surely, if love doesn't really exist, then the Kingdom of Love doesn't exist. And the Kingdom of Love must exist, or otherwise all meaning, value and purpose of life shall be lost. What is the meaning,

value and purpose of life if love is not paramount and absolute? Would you live in a world without love? Could you live in a world without love? As for me, I don't want to live in a world without love.

Life must be more than the limited love experienced in this terrestrial world, and our Creator's love must be omnificent. I fear I shall never feel absolutely secure if our Creator's love isn't omnificent. And then I recall the Wiseman's great and comforting exhortation: "Perfect love casts out all fears." Listen! The Lord of Life is whispering: "Fear not my child! It is I, your concerned, caring and compassionate Creator. Come home to me and enjoy my Kingdom of Love." I praise my Lord for the gift of spiritual intuition and its ability to sense His perfect love. Alas! The vile cancer of fear is purged from my spirit and soul, and I know my Creator is actively concerned about me, truly cares for me, and is compassionate about my ultimate well-being. My ultimate satisfaction, security and development are totally fulfilled by my loving Creator. Truly, truly, our Creator is love, and all things work to good for those who love Him. **Ultimately, love isn't everything. It's the only thing. Love shall prevail.**

## **5.4 The Law of Reciprocity**

---

**The Law of Reciprocity:** Regarding human social interactions, The Law of Reciprocity is the natural cosmic occurrence where the social reaction (effect) of a second party is equal to or greater than the initial social action (cause) of a first party. Hence, the social action of the first party is returned in kind (reciprocated) by the second party to the first party. The actual social reaction of the second party varies as a result of various social forces, especially the forces of love and fear.

There are several well known sayings that define The Law of Reciprocity. Consider the following sayings. (1) If there is any further injury, then you shall appoint as a penalty life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, burn for burn, wound for wound, and bruise for bruise. (2) You shall reap what you sow. (3) You give what you get, and you get what you give. (4) Love begets love, and antilove begets antilove. (5) Kindness begets kindness, and belligerent animosity begets belligerent animosity. (6) Peace begets peace, and violence begets violence.

It should be very obvious The Law of Reciprocity is not a rigid social law that the Children of Humanity must follow and obey. Nonetheless, this great law follows its natural human course, where the law's usual and customary exercise is

like a knee-jerk reaction of the sentient mind. When someone is nice to you, then in return it's your human nature to be nice to the person. You may even have a sense of social obligation to return a gift of kindness when a gift of kindness was first given to you. After all, it's only fair and reasonable to reciprocate kindness with kindness. On the other hand, when someone is mean to you, then in return it's also your human nature to be mean to the person. You may even have a sense of social obligation to return an act of meanness when an act of meanness was first inflicted upon you. After all, this mean person is only getting what he or she deserves. Our penal institutions are loaded with criminals that are now getting what they deserve. However, there are occasional occurrences where an act of kindness is returned with an act of animosity, or where an act of animosity is return with an act of kindness. Everyone has the ability to counteract the natural tendencies of The Law of Reciprocity. In fact, The Law of Reciprocity is readily counteracted by three types of sentient human beings: (1) the mentally disabled person, (2) the conniving person, and (3) the compassionate person.

1. The Mentally Disabled Person: Unfortunately in our terrestrial realm, some people are born with a disabled sentient mind. The sentient mind can also become disabled as a result of accidents or diseases. In general, the mentally disabled person cannot discern reality from their own imaginations. The source (or sources) of the disability remains a great mystery, creates very perplexing predicaments, and casts immense sorrows in all the villages of the world. The mentally disabled person is highly challenged just to exercise the most rudimentary functions of personhood. Consequently, proper and appropriate social interactions are impossible. At best, The Law of Reciprocity is highly limited for a person who is mentally disabled.
2. The Conniving Person: The conniving person is an active Agent of Evil. The conniving person can be aggressively brutal or amazingly beguiling and cunning. And such people will use The Law of Reciprocity to gain advantage of their victims. In the end the conniving person doesn't really care about The Law of Reciprocity. Their concern and care is focused upon how they can achieve and fulfill their selfish and wanton desires. And they'll take advantage of any person who just happens to cross paths with this malevolent Agent of Evil. They see their victims as suckers, fools and easy marks. Ultimately, the conniving person becomes a master at returning acts of meanness where acts of kindness were first given to them.
3. The Compassionate Person: The compassionate person willfully exercises acts of kindness even when acts of meanness were first inflicted upon them. This is because sentient-love rules their heart, their soul, and their mind. The compassionate person actively practices the instructions to love their enemy and to pray for them. In spite of first being inflicted with acts of animosity, the compassionate person will not exercise The Law of Reciprocity, and thus return

acts of animosity when animosity was first given to them. On the contrary, the compassionate person is quick to exercise The Law of Reciprocity where kindness is returned in lieu of animosity. The compassionate person only exercises The Law of Reciprocity whenever this mighty law can enhance The Law of Love.

## **The Law of Reciprocity Is Mankind's Intrinsic Nature**

Obviously, reactions to The Law of Reciprocity can vary greatly. That's because sentient reactions are subject to personal volition. Volition and wisdom are directly associated. Furthermore, one's volition can be dominated by love, selflessness and kindness, or it can be dominated by fear, selfishness and belligerent animosity. Accordingly, The Law of Reciprocity can be a very powerful, positive and proactive force, or it can be a very negative force that can adversely affects all relationships. In fact, the negative elements of The Law of Reciprocity are the greatest deterrents to sentient-love, world peace, and global harmony. Accordingly, The Law of Reciprocity may greatly help you, or it may greatly hinder you. Furthermore, a significant portion of mankind allows The Law of Reciprocity to dominate their lives in an extremely conactive manner. As an example, every act of road rage is the result of The Law of Reciprocity. The person infested with rage perceives himself as a victim of an insult perpetrated by another driver, and he's now determined to reciprocate that insult back to his nemesis. And of course, the original insult, if it actually did occur, may have been intentional or non-intentional. Whatever the circumstances may have been, insult begets insult. Mankind must evolve beyond the limitations of The Law of Reciprocity if he's to achieve his ultimate potential within the Creator's cosmic village.

The exercise of The Law of Reciprocity is mankind's first nature, thus making it very natural and very easy to love your own kind. In response, your own kind naturally reciprocates their love for you. Your own kind is represented by your family, your neighbors next door and across the street, your fellow countrymen, your fellow members of your race or religion, and so on. This type of love is a conditional love based upon the condition: "I love you **because** you're part of my family, or neighborhood, or country, or race, or religion, and so on. You're the same as me; therefore, I love you." This type of conditional love is called "**selective love**." Selective love is very limited and very rigid, thus restricting your heart and mind from loving those who are different from you. And if you limit your love in conjunction with The Law of Reciprocity, then your heart and mind shall never open to loving all of God's children; that is, your fellow sentient human beings. And know this great truth. Selective love is the death of morality and tolerance. The restriction and limitations of morality and tolerance quickly undermines the very essence of Democracy. If selective love ruled the hearts and minds of the People, then true Democracy would cease to exist. It would

quickly decline into a fascist dictatorship, and the undesirable people who are different from the ruling selective class would become second class citizens. And look what's coming next – persecution, false prosecution, unjust isolation, social inequality, and in extreme case murder.

## **Selective Love as Addressed by Jesus**

I personally believe Jesus' primary topic of His teachings concerned the principles of love. As The Father of The Psychology of Love, His teachings are worthy of consideration. Did Jesus actually address the topic of selective love? Of course He did. This teaching was in association with the Roman's practice of State authorized revenue collectors; that is, the Tax Gatherers. This is the recording of what Jesus said about selective love. "For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax gatherers do the same?"

The tax collectors in Jesus' day were the scum of the earth and were highly despised. These tax collectors lusted for money, and they sometimes used extortion and brutal force to obtain payment for alleged taxes. Often the tax debts were fabricated or were not legally binding. Subsequently, even the most corrupted scum of the earth love their own kind. Selective love is the single greatest obstacle to mankind's ultimate, spiritual evolution. Truly, selective love prevents the Children of Humanity from evolving to the spiritual level that our GBLC wants His children to achieve. When the collective of mankind removes the barrier of selective love, then peace and good will shall dominate all nations, which in turn shall allow mankind to achieve a quality of life that's now considered impossible. And know this important fact. Any selective lover can overcome his or hers nature to be a selective lover. Even one of Jesus' apostles was a tax collectors, that apostle being Matthew.

Note that The Law of Reciprocity may directly conflict with The Law of Love. Under The Law of Love, you're called to love all of our Creator's children, even those who are different from you and those who are your enemy. If you only exercise The Law of Reciprocity, then you'll never be able to make peace with your enemy – and thus secure peace for your children, your grandchildren and your great grandchildren. Let's stop and consider military conflicts between two nations, especially long-standing conflicts. When belligerent people start loving their children more than they hate their enemy, then peace shall take root and dissolve the animosity that separates the warring parties. While the proactive elements of The Law of Reciprocity may serve you well (love begets love), the conactive elements of The Law of Reciprocity are a great stumbling block (antilove begets antilove). Beware the dark side of The Law of Reciprocity, and always seek to first fulfill The Law of Love. Always remember this. You can't truly love your GBLC if you're belligerent and hateful to any of His other children. When true, sincere

and genuine love takes root in your heart, then wonderful things happen to you. Likewise, when true, sincere and genuine love takes root in the hearts of the global collective, then wonderful things shall happen to this great, beautiful and wonderful world.

## **5.5 The Law of Reconciliation**

---

**The Law of Reconciliation**: The Law of Reconciliation is the element of true, sincere and genuine love that creates the intentional and premeditated act to resolve and dispose all ill-will and contempt between opposing parties. The ultimate goal is to intentionally create mutual agreement, mutual respect, and mutual harmony between the conflicting parties, and thus achieve the dignity that's deserving of noble sentient beings such as the Children of Humanity.

The Law of Reconciliation is the only way to peacefully resolve hostile conflicts between two parties. This is because of the ethereal powers that are a part of this great cosmic law. The heart of The Law of Reconciliation is love, mercy and forgiveness. To move from the negative facets of The Law of Reciprocity to the good and righteous elements of The Law of Love, you must first exercise The Law of Reconciliation. By the exercise of The Law of Reconciliation, a conflict between opposing parties is dissolved, and the once contemptuous parties are now harmonious parties. Reconciliation is always a willful act that's considered and planned for the specific purposes of resolving a conflict. This can only occur as the result of the internalized, sentient operations of a truly loving person. Like love, reconciliation is never an accidental occurrence. I believe an act of reconciliation involves an intellectual element, a volitional element, and an emotional element.

1. **Reconciliation's Intellectual Element**: Reconciliation begins with an intellectual element that seeks to understand the events and circumstances that led to the respective conflict. In effect, reconciliation first reviews and assesses the grievances of all conflicting parties. You must discern which grievances are true and reasonable, and which grievances are petty and lack reasonable justification. And above all, all parties must be as objective as possible to ensure all parties are treated fairly and reasonably. Accordingly, reconciliation always begins with an act of intelligence. In addition, when you need the grace of reconciliation, it's extremely helpful to specifically assess long-term effects

as well as short-term effects. The heart of reconciliation's intellectual element is based upon the fact that "love and peace" are highly preferred to "fear and war." Note that love and peace are mutually and highly beneficial to all parties.

2. Reconciliation's Volition Element: Reconciliation is finally culminated with a volitional element that willfully forgives the persons who are in conflict. This especially includes forgiving oneself for the wrongs one has done. Reconciliation can never be realized unless both opposing parties desire and will to achieve "the state of reconciliation." All parties are mutually benefited when true, sincere and genuine forgiveness is exerted by all parties and to all parties.
3. Reconciliation's Emotional Element: Reconciliation then continues with an emotional element that initiates the sentient attribute of mercy. It's a common misconception that mercy is a voluntary act of the intellect. I personally believe mercy is an involuntary act of emotional feelings, those feelings being a composite of sympathy, sorrow and compassion. These three emotional attributes have the power to open a flood gate of mercy. In addition, these emotional feelings must be applied to all parties, including oneself. Everyone needs the internal attribute of self-mercy. And again, note that all parties mutually benefit from acts of mercy.

It's noted you must be cool, calm, collected and rational in order to properly exercise your faculties of intelligence, volition and emotions. You must be in control of all of your faculties if you're to exercise The Law of Reconciliation. Subsequently, if you're distressed and lacking in any one of these faculties, then you won't be able to exercise The Law of Reconciliation. This especially includes the control of one's emotions. Hostile emotions, especially hidden hostile emotions, always derail the reconciliation process. And know this great truth. The Law of Reconciliation is the only way to resolve one's personal, internal, soulful turmoil and agitation that's a result of internalized, belligerent animosity. I'm talking about self-belligerent-animosity that one inflicts upon oneself. All imperfect sentient beings need to exercise self-reconciliation. Harboring belligerent animosity sucks the happiness and joy right out of your life. And realize this. Belligerent animosity is a state of personhood that's created by the exercise of antilove. Some level of mercy and forgiveness is required to sustain the best of loving and healthy relationships. Consequently, all relationships only survive because The Law of Reconciliation is periodically exercised.

## **5.6 The HSG Love Model**

---

**The HSG Love Model:** Love is the active concern, the tender care, and the affirming compassion for the **h**appiness, the **s**afety, and the **g**rowth of another sentient being. HSG Love is the predominate form of sentient-love that's exercised among the Children of Humanity.

In my reflections, I have concluded mankind is primarily influenced by two forms of sentient-love. Each form of love is rooted within one element of mankind's duality; that is, mankind's terrestrial nature and mankind's celestial nature. Accordingly, there is terrestrial love and there is celestial love. Mankind's terrestrial love is founded in Brotherly Love, which the ancient Greeks called "phileo love." Mankind's celestial love is founded in godly love, which the ancient Greeks call "agape love." I define mankind's terrestrial love as "the HSG Love Model" and mankind's celestial love as "the SSD Love Model." The HSG Love Model is based upon the active concern for a person's happiness (H), safety (S), and growth (G). The SSD Model of Love is based upon the active concern for a person's ultimate satisfaction (S), ultimate security (S), and ultimate development (D). Agape Love and the SSD Love Model are addressed in the next section.

It's emphasized the HSG Love Model is founded upon Brotherly Love. However, the HSG Love Model is far broader and much deeper than what is generally regarded as Brotherly Love. The HSG Love Model is like an iceberg where the essence and nature of Brotherly Love is only the tip of the iceberg. I firmly believe all sentient-love relationships begin with Brotherly Love. But look closely below this love-iceberg, and there you'll find all the other forms of TSG Love that are part of the human experience. This especially includes the love between husbands and wives, parents and children, good citizens and their country, and the Good Warrior and his or hers fellow citizens. The HSG Love Model is also called phileo love, and whenever I use the phrase "phileo love," I'm referring to the HSG Love Model. Likewise, I use the phrases "terrestrial love" and "HSG Love" to refer to the HSG Love Model. In addition, I use the word "phileoian" to refer to a person who exercises the HSG Love Model. If you're concerned, caring or compassionate about the happiness, safety and growth of those you love, then you're a phileoian. It's also noted that a phileoian is an "Advocate of Love."

This love-language which I have developed may seem silly and trite to many people, but I would gladly be labeled a phileoian and an Advocate of Love. Humbly speaking, I profess to be a phileoian, and I would be personally proud if my fellow citizens believed I really am a phileoian. Now, how about you? Would you find it acceptable to be defined as a phileoian or as an Advocate of Love? Do

you want to be an Advocate of Love? And is it true that everybody loves a lover? Would they love someone who advocated HSG Love? Now, here are my personal reflections regarding some elementary principles of the HSG Love Model.

## **Elementary Principles of the HSG Love Model**

1. **HSG Love Is Always Active:** All forms of HSG Love are always active. I believe there's no such thing as passive love. A passive love is not TSG Love; but instead, passive love is an anemic form of pseudo love. A passive love has shallow roots and as soon as the relationship experiences the trials and tribulations of life, the passive love quickly withers and disintegrates. And most of all, passive love is well known for its absence of faithfulness, fidelity and loyalty.
2. **HSG Love Has All Three Dimensions of HSG:** True-love involves all three human dimensions of happiness, safety and growth. Emphatically speaking, love cannot exist unless all three HSG dimensions are an active part of one's self-professed love. If one of these dimensions is missing in a love relationship, then that love relationship is a conditional, and rudimentary form of love.
3. **The Inner Dynamics of HSG Love:** The three dimensions of HSG Love actively interact and mutually support each other. The activity of each dimension must also be approximately equal or otherwise the love relationship becomes unbalanced. HSG Love is like a three legged stool where each dimension represents a leg of the stool. If all three legs are equal then the stool is balanced. If one leg is short and deficient, then the stool is unbalanced and tilted. No one likes a tilted love relationship no more than they like sitting on a tilted stool. You always have the nagging sensation you're about to slip off your foundation of love. Never allow your love to become unbalanced and then slip away. All love relationships require constant maintenance, and the best form of maintenance is preventative maintenance. Keeping the HSG love stool balanced is a function of preventative maintenance. Always remember, pay equal attention to the happiness, safety, and growth of those you love.
4. **The Multiple Facets of Love's Growth Dimension:** Most people readily understand love's dimensions of happiness and safety. In fact, most people over emphasize the dimension of happiness, and some people even believe love and happiness are synonyms. And of course, love that's only concerned with happiness is a highly conditional love. Regarding love's safety dimension, most people also readily associate safety with the essence and nature of love. The active concern for the safety of someone you love is a very natural occurrence. This especially applies to loving parents and their love for their children. Throughout history, societies have always placed the safety of children as the

societies' first concern. It really does take a village to properly raise a child. Also note that the safety of the youngest children receives the society's highest concern and protection. On the hand, the concern for a person's growth is often overlooked. Do you associate love with a person's growth? Furthermore, be sure to realize that love's growth dimension is not limited just to a person's physical growth and their good health. Love's concern for a person's growth includes all the multiple facets of the sentient human being and the human experience. The active concern for one's growth includes physical growth, intellectual growth, emotional growth, psychological growth, sentient growth, spiritual growth, and ultimately, to grow in the knowledge, wisdom and exercise of love. Let your love grow! And for those you love, be sure to fertilize them with love.

5. HSG Love Is Mankind's Higher Lover: HSG Love is the primary form of love that mankind achieves and exercises within the terrestrial realm. Accordingly, HSG Love is the terrestrial love form of mankind's higher love. This is especially in comparison to the many forms of conditional love. It's also noted at this time that Agape Love is a higher form of love than phileo love, and I call it "The Great Love."
6. HSG Love Is Unconditional Love: HSG Love is an unconditional love, thus being a higher state of love than any form of mankind's conditional loves, especially selective love. Any form of conditional love is not a true, sincere and genuine love, but represents a false and pseudo love. It's also noted perfect unconditional love is a human goal and is not a human condition. We are an imperfect people in an imperfect world, and we can only strive to do our best to be an HSG Lover.
7. HSG Love Is the Bond That Binds Sentient Human Beings: HSG Love is the cosmic sentient force that provides the love attribute called "human attachment." Human attachment is also called "interpersonal connection" and "human bonding." This is a positive, proactive and optimistic form of bonding, and this type of bonding produces the interpersonal sensations of acceptance and belonging. Because of the power of acceptance and belonging, just the simple presence of your loved ones can make you happy. In a healthy relationship this bond continues to grow, and eventually the bond becomes unbreakable. Consequently, the love relationship evolves into "union love." Thus, it is deeply believed "sentient-love never fails." Lastly, it should be noted and emphasized that the concept of the "love-bond" never restricts or impedes the principles of sentient freedom. If it did, then the love-bond would actually be a form of human bondage. Never forget the heart of sentient-love is free-will, thus honoring our Creator's gift of sentient freedom for all of His children.

8. HSG Love Graciously Resolves Personal Human Conflicts: In the best and strongest of relationships, personal human conflicts still occur. Naturally, how you handle these inevitable conflicts will affect the quality of your relationships. In the midst of a conflict, it's very important for you to stop, listen, pause and think about your loved ones perspective of the conflict. You must graciously do this reflective communication in order to respond to your loved ones in a way that not only connects you with them, but also validates both of you. In this way, you have a better chance of arriving at a solution that shall "connect you with your loved ones" and not "disconnect you from your loved ones." After all, HSG Love is all about mutual communications, mutual connections, and mutual commitments. Without love's interpersonal connections, your relationships shall wither away and eventually die. Accordingly, the intentional exercise of HSG Love mutually, respectfully and peacefully resolves your personal human conflicts.

## **Additional Reflections Regarding the HSG Love Model**

Now consider this. A person exercises HSG Love when that love focuses upon the happiness, safety and growth of those people that are truly loved. If I express concern for your happiness, then I'm actually expressing my love for you. If I express concern for your safety or growth, then I'm also expressing my love for you. Beyond a doubt in my mind, you express your love for someone by addressing your concerns for their happiness, their safety and their growth. And this is all a critical element in the concepts of the HSG Love Model. Accordingly, I can send you a coded message that says "I love you" simply by saying "HSG." And in doing so, I believe I significantly expand the depth of meaning of my love for you. I think it's great to use the three little words "I love you," but the three letter acronym "HSG" expresses far more meaning and does it with less emotional uncertainty.

The truth is many people have learned not to trust the phrase "I love you." On the other hand, "HSG" is a code that represents a cognitive concept that focus upon the three dimensions of life that matter the most – your happiness, safety, and growth. This is not to belittle or diminish the emotional element of love, for love cannot exist without a healthy portion of your emotional investment. But I sincerely believe we first need an intellectual grasp that provides a social standard for an introductory beginning of TSG Love. Accordingly, love is HSG! This is surely biased by my male gender disposition, where the science of psychology has well established that men tend to be intellectually polarized while emotionally subdued. Men think first and feel second. The truth is men often need to think less and feel more. And it's noted the male's intellectual polarization

is independent of one's actual IQ. As for me, I know I'm smart because I adamantly embrace The First Paradigm of Life: "I know very little while I believe very much." Nonetheless, I most sincerely believe the elementary principles of the HSG Love Model are a great starting point for expressing my personal love for those I truly love. To those who read this message I say: "HSG to each and every one of you!" And I really mean that! May everyone in the entire world embrace and exercise the HSG Love Model.

## **5.7 The SSD Love Model**

---

**The SSD Love Model:** Love is the active concern, the tender care, and the affirming compassion for the ultimate satisfaction, the ultimate security, and the ultimate development of another sentient being. SSD Love is the only form of love by which mankind's Divine Creator loves His Children.

### **Elementary Principles of the SSD Love Model**

1. **SSD Love Is Always Active:** All forms of SSD Love are always active. In fact, there is no form of love that's more active than SSD Love.
2. **SSD Love Has All Three Dimensions of SSD:** Agape Love involves all three sentient dimensions of satisfaction, security and development. True Agape Love doesn't exist unless all three SSD dimensions are an active part of one's self-professed Agape Love. If one of these dimensions is missing in a love relationship that aspires to be an SSD Love relationship, then that love relationship is not founded upon SSD Love.
3. **The Inner Dynamics of SSD Love:** The three dimensions of SSD Love actively interact and mutually support each other. These are the same type of dynamic principles that apply to the HSG Love Model. The only difference is SSD Love is broader, deeper and more intense than HSG Love. Always remember, pay equal attention to the ultimate satisfaction, the ultimate security, and the ultimate development of those you love.
4. **The Multiple Facets of Love's Development Dimension:** Once again as with the HSG Love Model, the SSD Love Model's associated dimension of development requires a lover's special attention. As with the active concern for a person's growth, the active concern for a person's development is often overlooked as a function of love. But in contrast, the active concern for a

person's ultimate development far exceeds the active concern for a person's growth. In fact, the concern for a person's ultimate development is believed to be the zenith of love. Can you love a person more than the love that supports the person to achieve the actualization of their full and ultimate potential? And what do you do after you have achieved the actualization of your full and ultimate potential? Are you now an Ultimate Lover?

5. SSD Love Is Also Called "The Great Love": HSG Love is the predominate form of love that mankind achieves and exercises within the terrestrial realm. Accordingly, HSG Love is a terrestrial love and is the terrestrial form of mankind's higher love, especially in comparison to all forms of conditional love. However, mankind has always recognized humanity yearns for a greater and more enduring love than his limited form of terrestrial love. Mankind needs to be loved beyond their human abilities. And by virtue of our Creator's love for His children, He does love His children beyond their abilities. Therefore, SSD Love is "Godly Love," and it's called "The Great Love."
6. SSD Love Is Unconditional Love: Sometimes I like to stirrup the pot. And this is a pot of "food for thought." I believe Godly Love is actually very conditional. But there's only one condition, and that condition is for Godly Love to be totally and absolutely unconditional. Therefore, the Lord of Life whispers to all His children.

"I love you in spite of all your imperfections, blemishes and failures. I love you simply because you are. Now, come home to me my precious child and be an active, creative and loving collaborator in my Kingdom of Love. And here in my kingdom you shall develop to be a great agapian lover. Truly and surely, you shall become the actualization of your full and ultimate potential."

Now, how does the SSD Love Model differ from the HSG Love Model? There's a sensation of personal satisfaction that far exceeds all terrestrial sensations of happiness. There's a sensation of personal security that far exceeds all terrestrial sensations of feeling safe. And there's a level of personal development that's far beyond all levels of terrestrial growth. In my reflections, I have come to believe in three additional elements of SSD Love.

- A. SSD Love Is Mankind's Ultimate Love: SSD Love is the ultimate form of love that mankind longs for. Only a disabled sentient mind would reject a love that provides the ultimate concern for their ultimate well-being.

- B. SSD Love Is Partially Achievable in the Terrestrial Realm: A partial form of SSD Love is achievable within the terrestrial realm. Where HSG Love ends and SSD Love begins is very difficult to discern.
- C. SSD Love Dominates the Celestial Realm: SSD Love is the type of love that's predominately exercised in the celestial realm; that is, in the world-to-come. Be of great faith! The best is yet to come! What your eye has not seen, or what your ear has not heard, nor what you cannot conceive in your heart is what awaits you if you willfully exercise sentient-love.
7. SSD Love Is the Bond That Binds Mankind's Creator With His Children: HSG Love involves "human attachment," but SSD Love involves "cosmic attachment." In addition, cosmic attachment provides mankind's ultimate sensations of acceptance and belonging. Just try to imagine the sensation of being lovingly bonded with your gracious, benevolent and loving Creator. And one day He shall make a public announcement where He shall call you out and then pronounce:

This is my beloved Child of Humanity with whom I am very pleased. Listen to her (or him), for she (or he) knows all about my perfect love for all of my Children of Humanity. My love cannot be separated from any of my children who truly love me. Accordingly, we shall always be connected.

So then, just how strongly connected are you with your gracious Creator? Here is the Lord of Life's answer to this question.

Neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things past, nor things present, nor things to come, nor power, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing shall be able to separate the Children of Humanity from the love of their gracious, benevolent and loving Creator.

### **Additional Reflections Regarding the SSD Love Model**

Accordingly, SSD Love is primarily a celestial form of love, and it's properly referred to as a form of "a living love." In other words, love becomes us; and we become the personification of SSD Love. Hence, sentient-love is a state of being, and we have the ability to reflect this great truth within our terrestrial world. The Children of Humanity are called by their loving Creator to become the essence and nature of love. Thus, SSD Love is both a godly love and a Godly love. Our

Creator's love for his children is agape love, whereby our Divine Creator is actively concerned for the ultimate well-being of each and every one of His children. When it comes to the well-being of His children, our Heavenly Father is tenacious in His caring, His concern and His compassion for all His precious children.

Agape love is the greatest of the ancient Greeks' four loves and literally represents a form of love that has a Godly nature. In many of the books and articles I've read, agape love is simply defined as Godly love. In the Bible's New Testament where Jesus teaches The Law of Love, the Greek word used for "love" in the phrases "love God" and "love your neighbor" is the Greek word "agape." In other words, The Law of Love requires you to love God with a Godly love and to love your fellow man also with a Godly love. Even when Jesus taught to "love your enemies," the Greek word used for "love" is "agape." Consequently, you're even required to love your enemies in a Godly way. SSD Love is mankind's ultimate form of love, and it's the form of love by which our gracious Creator loves all His children. Therefore, agape love is truly The Great Love, and it truly is a living love. Love is alive, and love is all around.

Now beware! Agape love isn't for the socially meek or the spiritually weak. Surely, the Lord of Life's intentional will for mankind is to exercise SSD Love, this being the greatest challenge of mankind's terrestrial experience. Mankind's greatest dilemma is learning how to love his enemies and how to love those who are unlovable. How do you love the unlovable? Herein lays the answer. How deep and how broad is your personal capacity to exercise The Law of Reconciliation? How capable and committed are you to loving your fellow man the same way God loves him? Truly and surely, it's tough enough just being a phileoian, but being an agapian requires a state of selflessness that can only be achieved by deep-seated prayers and meditations. How deep is your love, and how willing are you to totally commit yourself to agape love? Beyond any doubt in my mind, the only way you can love your enemy is to exercise true, sincere and genuine SSD Love.

Finally, let me leave you with a great personal belief which I believe with all my heart. In the Kingdom of Love there is no one who professes to be a Christian. There is no one who professes to be a Jew or a Moslem or a Hindu or a Buddhist or any other member of an earthly religion. In the world-to-come, there are only two types of sentient beings. There are those who humbly profess to be an agapian, and there are those who humbly profess to be a phileoian while earnestly aspiring to be an agapian. Actively seek the Kingdom of Love so that you may achieve your ultimate satisfaction, your ultimate security, and your ultimate development.

## **5.8 The Model of Antilove**

---

**The Model of Antilove:** Antilove is the active or passive degradation or depravation of the well-being of a sentient being. This degradation or depravation may be an attack upon a person's happiness, satisfaction, safety, security, growth or development. An antilover is motivated by conditional love, selective love, selfishness and fear.

In order to truly understand sentient-love, you also have to understand antilove. There is "love," and there is "that which is not-love." That which is not-love is called antilove. Antilove manifests itself in two forms – selfishness (envy and jealousy) and fear (especially the fear of anxiety). Antilove is counter-creative and counter-productive to all that's good, righteous and beautiful. Antilove seeks to destroy and to create chaos. In addition, antilove wants to dominate, control and command all sentient beings, especially the Children of Humanity. It's the active will of antilove to enslave all sentient beings. Deep within the heart of the ultra antilover dwells the intense desire and demented will to usurp the Throne of God. Finally, antilove is the essence and nature of malevolence and evil. Beware the deceptive powers of antilove, for antilove will beguile you and take command of you. The weapons you possess to fight antilove are truth, love, prayer and meditation, these being the ethereal substances that lead to enlightenment. Arm yourself well in the Good Fight against antilove. Now, here are my personal reflections regarding some elementary principles of the Model of Antilove.

### **Elementary Principles of Antilove**

1. **Active and Passive Antilove:** Antilove can be either active or passive. Active antilove is exercised by the bully who attacks a vulnerable person. Passive antilove is exercised by those who do nothing while watching the bully attack his victim. In theological terms, the active antilover exercises sins of commission. The passive antilove exercises sins of omission. It's also noted the greatest form of passive antilove is laziness. Be sure to know that our loving Creator despises laziness; that is, God regards laziness with contempt, distaste, disgust, disdain and scorn.
2. **Degradation and Depravation:** The definitions of the words "degradation" and "depravation" are as follows: (1) "**degradation**" means "the act of reducing or lowering in character or quality," and (2) "**depravation**" means "the act of making something bad or worse, or the act of corrupting." An antilover wants to reduce your sentient character while trying to corrupt your sentient soul.

3. Antilove Nullifies Love: Antilove can affectively nullify HSG Love and SSD Love. Antilove especially favors manifesting itself in the form of lawlessness. When lawlessness increases, many people's love grows cold, becomes withdrawn, and then is totally negated. Antilove would rule our world and the Cosmos if it could overpower the good and tenacious Knights of Love. Sometimes it takes a lot of courage to be a sentient-lover, and all too often it also takes a lot of sacrifice.
4. Antilove's Selective Attacks: In order to be effective in its corruption, antilove only needs to degrade or deprave one dimension of HSG Love or SSD Love. And sometimes it can be very difficult to recognize antilove when it's degrading or depraving only one dimension of sentient-love. When conditions and limitations are applied to just one dimension of sentient-love, then that limited form of love is a conditional love. The question to consider is this. How much antilove exercised in a relationship can be tolerated before the relationship crumbles into a total disaster?
5. Everyone Exercises Antilove: Everyone exercises antilove in some way, in some manner, and some times. The truth is fatigue makes antilovers of us all. Consequently, we must always remember this great paradigm. We are all imperfect people in an imperfect world, whereby we all need to receive and to give mercy, forgiveness, reconciliation and redemption. Now, what predominates in your heart – love or antilove? And what are you doing to be the best and most consistent TSG Lover you can possibly be? Constant vigilance is required to guard against the dark powers of antilove.
6. Antilove Is a State of Being: Just the same as love is a state of being, antilove is also a state of being. In addition, it's extremely easy to fall into a state of antilove. Fortunately, the state of love is also easily entered through the open doors of prayer, mediation and love's power of reconciliation.
7. Antilove Effectively Blocks Interpersonal Communications: You must communicate your love if you're to sustain your love. On the other hand, antilove is often the results of a failure to communicate. TSG Love mandates expressions and communications. Therefore, beware of the detrimental consequences created by the failure to effectively communicate. A breakdown in love's communications can quickly lead to a state of antilove and fractured relationships. Meanwhile, malevolent antilove is actively involved in shutting down all channels of communications. When you hear someone say "I don't want to hear about it!" then you know antilove is jamming all hopes of establishing loving communications.

8. Antilove Separates the Bonds That Bind Sentient-Love: It's easy to recognize antilove because of its nature to repulse and isolate the people that predominately exercise antilove. Whereas sentient-love's nature is to attract, attach, connect and bond people together, antilove's nature is to repulse, detach, disconnect and dissolve all healthy forms of relationships. While sentient-love provides the foundational sensation of personal acceptance, antilove provides the foundational sensation of personal rejection. And while sentient-love provides the foundational sensation of belonging, antilove provides the foundational sensation of expulsion and isolation. Finally, a person whose character is founded upon sentient-love makes you happy when they enter your presence. Such a person is a Type 1 Happy Maker. On the other hand, a person whose character is founded upon antilove makes you happy when they leave your presence. Such a person is a Type 2 Happy Maker. Consequently, everyone has the ability to make other people happy. It's just a question if you're a Type 1 Happy Maker or a Type 2 Happy Maker. Antilovers are incredibly selfish, lonely and unhappy people. Now, how about you? Are you primarily a Type 1 Happy Maker or a Type 2 Happy Maker?

### **Additional Reflections Regarding Antilove**

The Model of Antilove is a new concept for most people, and many people have a negative response to the concept. It's difficult to consider yourself as an antilover. And yet, everyone sooner or later degrades and depraves another person in some way, in some manner, and somehow. Every thought, word and act of animosity is an act of degradation and depravation upon another person. Facing your blemishes and imperfections can be very demoralizing, thus sucking the wind right out of your sails. That's why it's critically important to learn how to forgive yourself and thus build (and rebuild) the proactive sentient elements of your self-value, self-worth, self-esteem, and self-love. Our gracious, benevolent and loving calls all His children to take their best and make it better.

This is why I like The Model of Antilove. The war of "love versus antilove" is a constant battle, and we need a convenient method of determining how the battle is progressing. If you ignore the reality of antilove, then antilove has already won the war for the domination and control of your mind. Therefore, I throw down before you the gauntlet of love. This gauntlet is to be your living reminder that antilove truly does exist and it actively wants to dominate, control and command your beliefs, thoughts, mind, actions and character. Hence, in everything you believe, think, say or do, you have the willful choice to exercise either love or antilove. Now consider this. Are you winning the battle against antilove? In all

your beliefs, thoughts, words and actions, challenge yourself to discern if your true self is founded upon love or antilove. And every time you exercise this great and enlightening challenge, remember these two great paradigms. You shall be what you resolve to be, and love is never an accidental occurrence.

## **Antilove and Lust**

Lust is a special form of antilove that's a concentration of hedonistic selfishness. My intentional meaning of the word "lust" expands beyond the common understanding of the word. The word "lust" is usually used in the context regarding sexual desires, especially lecherous sexual desires. I define the word "**lust**" to mean "**the innately and inordinately selfish nature of wanton desires.**" The word "**inordinate**" means: (1) beyond proper limits, or excessive; (2) disorderly, or uncontrolled; (3) unrestrained in conduct, feelings, or other sentient attributes; and (4) unregulated and undisciplined. The word "**wanton**" means: (1) unprovoked actions accomplished with malicious and unjustifiable conduct; (2) willful, deliberate and without proper and reasonable provocation; and (3) without regard for what is right, just and humane. The definition of principle interest is "without regard for what is right, just and humane". Accordingly, here is my expanded meaning of the word "**lust.**" **Lust is the uncontrollable and excessive selfish desires to obtain what you want without regard for what is right, just and humane.**

Lust resides in the very heart of mankind's animalistic nature, for lust is the immoral essence of the human-animal. Like the story of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde, there is a beast dwelling within every terrestrial human being, and if the beast is not controlled, it shall create havoc for the individual and society as a whole. Sentient beings who allow lust to govern their lives ultimately live life by The Law of the Jungle and The Survival of the Fittest. Beyond any doubt, sentient human beings have the potential to have many forms of lusts including the lust for money, social power, sex, violence, gambling, alcohol, drugs, food, and even laziness. Lust has many forms, and any one of those forms has the ability to totally destroy you. Beware of the intoxicating powers of lust, for lust is the direct and slippery path to life's dark side.

## **Antilove, Fear and Selfishness**

If you closely consider and reflect upon the essence and nature of antilove, then you'll come to realize antilove is also the essence and nature of fear. In fact, **antilove is fear, and fear is antilove.** In this usage of the word "fear," I define "**fear**" to mean "a distressing emotion or state of being aroused by impending pain,

danger, evil, or any other condition that leads to a person's degradation, depravation or detriment." Fear can be real or imaginary, and whether the fear is real or imaginary, fear can be very paralyzing and destructive. And remember the Wiseman who warned: "The only thing we have to fear is fear itself." Extreme fear has the power to obliterate all sensations of personal happiness and satisfaction, safety and security, and growth and development. Surely and truly, fear is the essence and nature of antilove.

Now, most people believe the opposite of love is hate. But this is not true. **The opposite of love is fear.** Hatred is actually a reaction to fear, whereby "**hate**" is defined as "an intense dislike for something or someone, and thus creates an aversion to what you fear." You come to hate what you truly fear in your heart. Now, it's important to realize there are only three forms of fear: jealousy, envy and anxiety. Also note that jealousy and envy are the two forms of selfishness. Consequently, fear and selfishness are directly associated with antilove. Here are the definitions of the three forms of fear: (1) **Jealousy**: the inordinate **fear** of losing that which you deeply desire. (2) **Envy**: the inordinate **fear** of not obtaining that which you deeply desire. And (3) **Anxiety**: the **fear** of the unknown.

What is the full meaning of the word "anxiety?" My personal, definition of the word "**anxiety**" is "the fear of the unknown." The textbook definition of the word "**anxiety**" is "distress or uneasiness of mind caused by apprehension of danger or misfortune." There's also a very interesting psychiatric definition for the word "**anxiety**," which is "a state of apprehension and psychic tension found in most forms of mental disorders." It should be very apparent the ethereal substance of anxiety is a major factor in the lives of everyone. Where anxiety rules, then the quality of life greatly suffers. Everyone suffers from some degree of personal anxieties.

Jealousy, envy and anxiety always attack the heart of your well-being. If left unchallenged, these evil forces shall consume your spirit and soul, and then you'll become the living essence of antilove and an agent of evil. If you're to be an obedient and loving child of your Divine Creator, then you must be the master of your fears. This especially applies to the fear and anxiety of death. Do not fear death; but instead, accept and embrace the perfect love of your gracious and benevolent Creator. Never forget, perfect love casts out all fears. By being the master of your fears, you'll then have the power and ability to overcome your selfish desires. Always beware the seductive powers of antilove, fear and selfishness, for these evil forces actively seek to lure you to sleep and then snag you into their web of deceit and doom.

## **The Proactive Elements of Selfishness and Fear**

Everything in life has both a proactive feature and a conactive feature. While the ethereal substance of love is predominantly proactive, love can also have a conactive feature. As an example, there is a form of love that's called "smother-love." Excessive tender-love can bury a person until they lose their sense of self. The good intentions of the person exercising the smother-love may be true, sincere and genuine, but the ultimate act of smother-love undermines the well-being of the person loved. Love is a dynamic force that must always balance the short-term benefits with the long-term benefits. As an example, water is an incredible benefit of mankind, but if you get too much water, then you can easily drown in it. Too much of any good benefit can easily become a degradation and depravation to a person.

In a similar manner there are proactive forms of selfishness and fear. Proactive selfishness is actually a specific application of true self-love. True self-love is always active and always proactive. Proactive fear is actually a reverent and deep-seated respect of a power, force, authority, or other specific condition that could be potentially dangerous. Let us stop and ponder about proactive selfishness and proactive fear.

A person who is truly dedicated and devoted to the Life-Principle of Love can give, and give, and give until they're exhausted from their excessive giving. You can give so much in the short-term that it becomes a detriment in the long-term. Ultimately, you're responsible for your well-being. When your love-giving has become so great that you're totally exhausted mentally, emotionally, financially, or spiritually, then it's time for you to intercede with a healthy portion of proactive selfishness. The Art of Living mandates the moderation and balance in all elements of life. Everybody wants and needs a dynamically balanced life. It's a natural element of life that sentient human beings easily and readily deplete themselves, and thus require periodic rest and recuperation. In fact, proactive selfishness is a critical part of proactive self-love. And this is a great truth. The mutual well-being of the collective is dependent upon the well-being of the vast majority of society's individuals.

I firmly believe fear is mankind's ultimate nemesis. It's the soul – not the body – that suffers the most. If fear truly is mankind's ultimate nemesis, then how can there be a proactive form of fear? But I also know there is a proactive form of fear. Surely, we can fear a snake or any other dangerous animal, and that fear is certainly a healthy and proactive feature of self-preservation. We can also experience the fear of failure which actually is a specific type of anxiety. Truly, fear can be a major motivating force on the road to ultimate success. In addition,

most people have heard of these two wise sayings. “The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom.” “Fear not he who can destroy the body; but instead, fear He who can destroy the body and the soul.” These are definitely two examples of proactive fear.

Now, when it comes to the fear of God, many Bible scholars define that form of fear to be “an immense and deserving measure of respect.” This also results in a discussion regarding the difference between the respect of God versus the honor of God. Do you fear the Lord of Life, or do you respect the Lord of Life, or do you honor the Lord of Life? But no matter what your personal perspective may be, everyone who believes in the living reality of mankind's Creator has a deep-seated inkling of “Godly fear.” The question to consider is this. Does our loving Creator actually want His children to fear Him? I personally believe our loving Creator only wants His children's love and not their fear. Nevertheless, that old inkling of fear can quickly activate and make the hair on the back of my neck rise up and tingle. But on the other hand, how many stories are there about a sentient human being's encounter with his Divine Creator, and where the story begins with the Creator saying: “Fear not! It is I, your Heavenly Father.” Surely, these are some of the best stories that have ever been told.

## **Conactive Anxiety**

Conactive anxiety may be the greatest mental and emotional disorder experienced by mankind. This statement is based upon a quantitative perspective, thus representing the massive invasive nature of anxiety throughout society. Sooner or later everyone is affected by conactive anxiety. However, some people's encounters with anxiety are far more severe than the usual and customary encounters served up by anxiety. The mental and emotional stress of anxiety may also cause a variety of physiological related disorders. My sympathy is extended to those people who suffer from an excessive measure of anxiety, especially anxiety that's generated by imaginary apprehensions. Imaginary apprehensions are the unknown factors of anxiety, and that's why anxiety is the fear of the unknown. Excessive anxiety results in the soulful turmoil of panic attacks. Panic attacks can range from mild conditions to extremely severe conditions. In addition, excessive anxiety quickly leads to depression. Anxiety and depression go together like two sides of a coin. Furthermore, the more intense the anxiety is and the longer the anxiety lasts, then the more severe the depression becomes.

Now, anxiety and depression are natural elements of life, and everyone experiences some levels of anxiety and depression. Fortunately, most people work through their personal bouts of anxiety and depression. As previously addressed, some forms of anxiety actually benefit a person. Unfortunately though, there are some people who react to anxiety with an excessive and irrational response that

creates havoc in their souls. And it seems to me that some of the worst cases of crippling anxiety are created by religious generated anxieties. This is the irrational thinking that may occur.

### **Anxiety's Potential Mind Trap**

I really believe in the living reality of my Creator, and I truly love Him. So then, why isn't my life happy, satisfying and fulfilling? Why do my problems and concerns manifest themselves as incapacitating worries? Am I hiding some dark secret sin which I have concealed from myself? Have I offended my Creator so badly that I'm now His reprobate? Why am I like a sinking ship in a sea of despair? Is anyone concerned about me, and does anyone really care about me? Where is the compassion I'm supposed to receive? And where is the love? Where is the perfect love that shall set free me from all my anxieties? Why is it that I feel so all alone and why do I even exist? Mighty Angel of Death, can you at least comfort me?

Based upon my personal inquiry of self-interest, it has been consistently proven that anxiety and depression are best mended by proper and effective cognitive therapy. This type of therapy is based upon the pursuit of truth and the exercise of love. And a critical part of the pursuit of truth involves the patience's education of love's elementary principles, especially the principles of proactive self-love. The truth shall set you free, but a disabled mind presents a tremendous challenge to the therapist's success. A person's dysfunctional emotional nature can readily nullify the person's intellectual nature and enslave the person's volitional nature. In such a case, neither acts of intelligence nor the will of the spirit can overcome the intensity of the anxiety and the inertia of the depression. We're incredibly fragile creatures, thus often making life unfair, risky, uncertain and imperfect. How do you mend a broken heart that's beyond human mending? O' Mighty Creator, where is your tender and healing love? Please pour upon your disabled child the healing miracle of your compassionate love.

If I had the power to eradicate just one detrimental element of the human experience, I would eradicate the conactive and detrimental effects of excessive anxiety and immobilizing depression. The care of the soul is first paramount, and a broken soul is a truly sad and demeaning condition of the human experience. When a person's life is saturated in the darkness of total despair, then it's extremely difficult to see the small glimmer of hope that radiates from the heavenly side of the clouds of despair. Can a sentient mind actually be defective, and therefore, incapable of adapting and adjusting to life's usual and customary levels of anxiety and depression? Are such conditions the result of The Law of Fate? And will

mankind ever find a way to heal a sentient mind that's ravaged with irresolvable anxieties? To the victims of excessive anxieties, I know my words offer very little solace. But I truly do feel for you, and I wish you well. All I can really do is leave you with this thought. Embrace the ideals of hope, faith and love, for in the end, this is all anyone can really possess – no matter what one's state of mind may be. Never give up your hope of soulful mending, and never give into the degrading and depraving whispers of anxiety and depression. Our gracious and benevolent Creator's love is perfect, and in the end, His perfect love shall prevail. It simply has to!

## **The Life-Principles of Antilove and Selfishism**

A life consumed by antilove is a life that's based upon the Life-Principle of Antilove. You can even divide the Life-Principle of Antilove into two subgroups: (1) the Life-Principle of Active Antilove, and (2) the Life-Principle of Passive Antilove. As an example, a hard core criminal lives a life based upon the Life-Principle of Active Antilove. The active antilove lives life by this principle: "What is yours is mine, and I shall take by whatever means is necessary." A person who isolates and insulates himself or herself from society lives a life based upon the Life-Principle of Passive Antilove. Such a person avoids the responsibilities of love and life, and they hardly ever (if never) give from the charity of their heart. This is because they have no charity in their heart. The passive antilove lives life by this principle: "What is mine is mine, and I shall keep it mine no matter how much you may need it." In a similar manner, a life consumed by selfishness is a life that's based upon the Life-Principle of Selfishism. Let me first define what I mean by the word "selfishism." I define "**selfishism**" as "the internalized sentient drive founded upon the fundamental concepts of selfishness, whereby one willfully chooses to live life by actively fulfilling their selfish desires." Accordingly, selfishism seeks to immediately fulfill the self-gratification human pleasures.

All forms of lust are selfishism, and all acts of selfishism are acts of antilove. Now, everyone acts in a selfish manner every now and then. And don't forget about the proactive form of selfishness that can be very beneficial. However, people who consistently act in a selfish manner are living the Life-Principle of Selfishism. There are some people who are extremely loving, and there are some people who are extremely selfish. It's always easy to distinguish the extreme ends of life's spectrum. However, most people dwell somewhere between the two extremes of the spectrum. Accordingly, it can be very difficult to distinguish the genuine lovers from the selective lovers. What truly dominates, controls and commands your heart? Is it love, or is it antilove? Do you intentionally choose the Life-Principle of Love, or do you allow your innate animalistic nature control you, thereby living life by the Life-Principle of Selfishism? Do you choose love and selflessness, or do you choose antilove and selfishism?

## **Part 6**

# **A Sincere And Cheerful Farewell**

I've tried my very best to write this book in a soulful, interesting and successful manner. This has been a tremendous, personal challenge because I'm not gifted with a natural literary talent. Nevertheless, I know I'm a better person for my efforts. In spite of my writing limitations, I hope the reader has enjoyed this book and finds his or hers efforts were worth the investment. To this task I've been true, sincere, and genuine. I like to think of myself as adding warmth and color to a cold and gray world. I also know the primary topic of this book – that is, sentient-love – is a very good topic and a very important topic. Sentient-love is like a rainbow which radiates warmth and comfort. Our world needs a much better understanding of the fundamental principles of love. In turn, I truly and deeply hope the reader would share his or hers reflections of this book with their family and friends. Please help expand the collective's knowledge and understanding of love. In reflection of this fact, I wish the reader all the blessings that life has to offer. Live long and prosper, actively sharing all the fruits of your love with your fellow sentient human beings.

## **6.1 Live Life by the Ideology of Love**

Maybe you haven't fully bought into the power and glory of sentient-love. Are you on the fence, tending to totter between love and antilove. I know for many people, antilove is a very viable choice, but that's only because they don't believe in the living reality of mankind's Creator. If this is the case, then please consider one more very important element of life. I know life is a very difficult struggle, and disadvantaged citizens have a far greater challenge than the fortunate citizens who are blessed with life's abundance. Nonetheless, all citizens need to focus upon the big picture of life, which includes the ultimate prize for the Children of Humanity. What is the ultimate prize of life? The ultimate prize of life is the continuing existence in the world-to-come; that is, life in the Kingdom of Love. Sentient-love shall lead you to the freedom of the fear of death, and the freedom of the fear of death is the greatest gift you can obtain in our terrestrial world. This is true whether you're a disadvantaged child of God or an advantaged child of God.

In the event you perceive yourself as being a disadvantaged child, then consider this great truth. Being poor doesn't diminish a person's ability to live life by The Ideology of Love. Growing up in a low income neighborhood that's riddled with violent crime, dope dealers, dope addicts, and prostitutes doesn't reduce a person's ability to live life by The Code of Love. Growing up in a single parent

family doesn't decrease a person's ability to live life by the principles of love. And growing up in a family where one or both parents are defective and toxic doesn't negate the ability to live life by the life principle of love. Ultimately, there's no cosmic excuse for failing to live life by the power and glory of love. While antilovers may misguide a person along life's path to loving enlightenment, all of God's children are presented with many invitations to the fruits of love. It all a simple matter of a person choosing love over antilove. It's all a matter of personal will, and where there's a will, there's a way.

Now, consider this fact. The power and glory of sentient-love includes immediate short-term rewards and blessings as well as future long-term rewards and blessings. Love is the most satisfying ethereal substance known to mankind. Selfish desires may promise immediate gratification, but these selfish gratifications don't satisfy and fulfill the deep longings of the soul. These false promises of immediate gratification are black lies, and they're usually made with the intentional purpose of deceit and deception. They're looking for the spiritually weak who can easily be trapped by the lure of selfishism. Ultimately, selfishism leaves a sour and bitter taste, thus forging the person into a sour and bitter state of being. Surely and truly, everyone must consider this great and wise question regarding the reality of life: "What does a man profit if he gains the whole world but loses his soul?"

Sentient-love is impartial and indiscriminant. With sentient-love, it doesn't matter if you're rich or poor, or if you're highly intelligent or simple minded. With sentient-love, it doesn't matter if you're male or female, or if you're straight or gay. With sentient-love, it doesn't matter if you're Christian, Jewish, Moslem, Hindu, Buddhist, or any other earthly religion. And with sentient-love, it doesn't matter if you're capitalist, communist, socialist, or any other political ideology. Sentient-love is for all, but not all are for sentient-love. This is very tragic when you consider the personal value love is to the sentient human being. And it's all a matter of personal choice. Love is never an accidental occurrence, but it's always an intentional exercise of those who willfully chose to live life by the power and glory of love. Sure, the world may be in total turmoil, but sentient-love is always creative and always finds the good rewards of life. Now, how about you? What shall you choose? Do you choose sentient-love and celestial life, or do you choose selfishism and celestial death? I hope you chose love and life! Finally consider these questions. Where shall your mind dwell at the moment of your terrestrial death? What do you think the Angel of Death really looks like?

## **The Angel of Death Is Mankind's Greatest Fear And Anxiety**

There's no greater faith than the confident belief that your terrestrial death is also your celestial birth. The person who diligently and consistently exercises sentient-love steadily evolves in spirit and faith. Eventually you attain an enlightenment that reveals your spiritual entity shall continue to live after your physical death. Thus, you have the ability to live your terrestrial life with confidence, joy, optimism and a positive anticipation that the best is yet to come. And what is the source that creates these inner personal sensations of confidence, joy, optimism and positive anticipation? It's the three great sentient promises our Celestial Father has revealed to His Children of Humanity.

Sentient Promise #1: All things work to good for those who truly, sincerely and genuinely love their Creator.

Sentient Promise #2: Things which the eye has not seen, things which the ear has not heard, and things which cannot be conceived in the hearts of mankind is what awaits those who truly, sincerely and genuinely love their Creator.

Sentient Promise #3: Neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things past, nor things present, nor things to come, nor power, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing shall be able to separate the Children of Humanity from the love of their gracious, benevolent and loving Creator.

## **O' Mighty and Frightful Angel of Death, Would You Please Be My Friend and Neighbor?**

Though I walk through the valley of the shadow of Death, I shall fear no Evil, for my loving Creator is always with me. His powers of love comfort me, and my cup of abundance runneth over. In His infinite grace, He prepares a great feast for me in celebration of my life. Surely, goodness and loving kindness shall follow me all the days of my life. And I shall dwell forever in the Holy Mansion created by my gracious, benevolent and loving Creator. Because my benevolent Creator's love is absolutely perfect, His love casts out all my fears and anxieties, and my soul is liberated to soar like an angel on high. With great joy, I now make the Angel of Death my good and comfortable friend. O' mighty Angel of Death, my true forbearing and foreboding friend, where now is your sting? And to my all powerful, all knowing, and all present Celestial Father, into your hands I entrust my soul and spirit. When you truly love your gracious Creator, then every day is a good day to die!

## **6.2 Be a Mighty and Noble Advocate of Love**

I've asked you several times in the process of this book for you to become an **Advocate of Love**, which I abbreviate as "**AoL**." What does it really mean to be an Advocate of Love, especially a Mighty and Noble Advocate of Love? The word "**advocate**" means: (1) to plead in favor of; support or urge by argument; recommend publicly; and (2) one who defends, vindicates, or espouses a cause by argument; upholder; defender. Here's my personal definition of an Advocate of Love.

### **Definition of an Advocate of Love**

An Advocate of Love is a person who supports, recommends and urges their family, friends and acquaintances to: (1) pursue the truth about the principles of sentient-love, (2) exercise sentient-love, (3) quietly and graciously teach the principles of sentient-love, and (4) defend the principles of love as being the best Life-Principle and Life-Ideology by which a person can live their life.

It's actually a simple thing to be an AoL. Basically, you make the conscientious decision to live life by The Ideology of Love, and then you follow up on that decision by consistently exercising the fundamental principles of love. Thus, you become dedicated, devoted and committed to exercising the principles of love. In addition, you share the principles of love with other people, including family, friends and acquaintances. Upon gaining experience and confidence as an Advocate of Love, you'll find yourself sharing the principles of sentient-love with strangers. Lastly, you need to know there are two types of Advocates of Love. You'll have to make a decision which type of AoL you want to be. The two types of AoL are the Quiet Advocate of Love and the Vivacious Advocate of Love.

### **The Quiet Advocate of Love**

The Quiet AoL is for the loving person who commits himself or herself to the quiet and inward practices of the fundamental principles of true-love. I designate this type of AoL as "**the Quiet Advocate**." Quiet Advocates exercise the principles of love to all persons they meet, but they especially exercise love principles with their family and friends. As a Quiet AoL, you actively talk about the principles of love with your close circle of family and friends. When you do this, you'll learn your love for them grows even stronger. Likewise, you'll learn

their love for you also grows stronger. Thus, the bonds of love are reinforced, and they shall not break when the Winds of Fate blow trials and tribulations upon you and those you love. This shall be a magnificent blessing to you and those you love.

A Quiet Advocate will use every opportunity to express some little elements of love principles with strangers that are encounter every day. If the stranger is also an AoL, you may even remark to the person that they appear to be an AoL. If they are an AoL, then they'll probably smile with you and respond in a courteous and friendly manner. If they're not an AoL, then you'll have an opportunity to briefly mention to them The Ideology of Love, especially the elements of hope, faith, brotherly love, democracy and the great optimism of life. Let them also know about the freedom of the fear of death.

Now, here's the blessing a Quiet Advocate of Love obtains for his or hers efforts. You may be the loving person whose smile and kind words lead a stranger to a better life, a more satisfying life, and a more fulfilled life. If that should happen, then I bet they'll seek you out and thank you greatly for the quiet guidance you selflessly gave them. If this doesn't happen in this world, then I know it'll happen in the world-to-come.

## **The Vivacious Advocate of Love**

The Vivacious AoL is for the loving person who commits himself or herself to the energized and outward practices of the fundamental principles of love. I designate this type of AoL as "**the Vivacious Advocate**." The Vivacious Advocate is a person who is a pupil of, and an adherent follower of, the fundamental principles of true-love, whereby the Vivacious AoL actively seeks to share and teach the principles of love to others. As defined by the definition of the word "vivacious," a Vivacious AoL is a lively, animated, enthusiastic and committed Advocate of Love. Now, the Vivacious Advocate does everything the Quiet Advocate does, but they also actively seek to teach the principles of love in an active manner. This is done in many ways, and whenever and wherever opportunity strikes. But this is best done in a well planned and methodical manner. Accordingly, the Vivacious AoL actively pursues to fulfill The Great Love Mission: "To every person in every nation, let us teach the principles of love."

The potential rewards of the Vivacious Advocate are beyond human perception. And who really knows what you can do as a Vivacious Advocate of Love? Maybe you'll be the Vivacious Advocate who takes a low income neighborhood that's riddled with violent crime, dope dealers, dope addicts, and prostitutes, and turns the neighborhood into a thriving and spiritually prosperous neighborhood – that is, a fantastic neighborhood where concern, care and compassion rule the hearts of all who dwell there. Now, there's a neighborhood

that all citizens would be proud to grow up in. Would you please be my loving friend and neighbor? And the amazing truth is there are love-scorched and love-dried cities where one can find several neighborhoods that are a love-oasis. Love is like a cool, wet glass of water in the scorched and dry desert of despair. And as an Advocate of Love, you're the water bearer.

### **6.3 Start a Phileo Study Group**

In the event you choose to be a Vivacious Advocate of Love, then your personal mission is to actively fulfill Love's Great Mission: "To every person in every nation, let us teach the principles of love." I personally believe the best way to accomplish this admirable mission is by having an informal and limited gathering of family and friends for the primary purpose of learning and sharing the principles of love. I call this a Phileo Study, for which the literal meaning is "the Study of Brotherly Love." Let us study together and learn the principles of love.

A Phileo Study Group should have at least six members, but no more than twelve members. The study group should meet once each week, on the same day and at the same time. Meeting consistency is critical for the success of the study. However, the group must also plan appropriate breaks from the weekly meetings. The group should choose the materials to be studied, and of course I recommend the group begin their study with this book. This obviously would be very rewarding to me on several levels. Needless to say, there are many good books on the subject of love. The group should select several books for study and be prepared to start the study of the next selected book. Include a variety of book subjects that are inspirational and enlightening to the soul. Such books can be fictional as well as nonfictional. Furthermore, the study group should mix things up such as watching a good, life affirming movie. Be sure to have a lively discussion concerning the love principles that are part of the movie.

Now, the continuous learning of the principles of love is fulfilling within itself, but a secondary advantage of a Phileo Study Group is derived from the close socialization with family and friends. Each study session should also include refreshments and time for individual interactions. At least one group session each month should include a pot luck dinner prior to the study session. You should also vary the home location where the study session occurs. When the group has finally completed the chosen study material, you will probably find the greatest enjoyment of the study was the socialization with your family and friends. Consequently, your bond of love shall continue to grow stronger with your family and friends. And here once again, the power and glory of love provides additional satisfaction and fulfillment in conjunction with the positive affirmation and ethereal blessings of this wonderful human experience.

Once a vivacious AoL has some experience with several Phileo Study Groups, then the AoL should start a Phileo Study Group with individuals who are outside one's immediate circle of family and friends. This would also be an excellent way of creating new friends. Places of Religious Assembly (churches, synagogues, mosques, and so forth) should also start Phileo Study Groups, both for their members and as an outreach program for their communities. I believe it would be wonderful if Vivacious Advocates would start and organize high school programs for Phileo Studies. Such Phileo Studies would be an after school activity and could even be called the Phileo Club. Furthermore, this type of activity would also be a study of many academic elements including government and civics, sociology, psychology, and theism. The heart of the program is to help these highly impressionable teenagers make wiser life-choices and to help prepare them to become better citizens. Likewise, colleges and universities should offer special programs for Phileo Study Groups. And who really knows? Maybe high schools and colleges will even offer the study of love's elementary principles as a credited course. **America and all nations truly need dedicated educational courses that teach the fundamental principles of love.**

## **6.4 An Affectionate Goodbye**

---

I've presented many features regarding the fundamental concepts of the human experience. If there is one feature that is first important, then it's the concept of the innate value of each and every sentient human being. You are of great worth and of great value simply because you're literally a precious child of the Cosmic Creator. You're literally a very highly valued entity with a cosmic potential that's beyond your current ability of conception. You are created by your loving Creator with a cosmic element that I call the **PICV Factor**, where PICV is an acronym for **Personal, Intrinsic Cosmic Value**. If you accept this great paradigm and let it take root within your sentient heart, then your entire perspective of life becomes solidly bonded in the fundamental principles of love. When you truly accept your PICV, then you shall become the personification of love. When this great love meets you face-to-face, it's an event you shall never forget. And you shall recall this event from time-to-time, drawing inner strength in moments of spiritual trial. Relax and rest in this moment of your destiny.

You're probably wonder how I know this cosmic condition with such personal conviction? It's because I had this personal experience of meeting love face-to-face. It was revealed to me as a PSE of the Second Kind. Such an event is a matter of subjective truth in the terrestrial world, but this great event lingers in my heart as a great objective spiritual truth. And I'm confident that if you sincerely seek to know the living reality of your loving Creator, then you too shall have a PSE of the Second Kind. I'm hoping you're wondering what a "PSE" is. "PSE" stands for "Personal Spiritual Experience."

I have sincerely learned that one of the driving forces of love is to share the meaning, power, and glory of love. This book is my personal attempt to fulfill this Driving Force of Love. How well have I done? Of course, the answer is not for me to determine. The fruits of one's love cannot be judged by oneself, but they can only be judged by others. And you shall be known by the fruits of your love. Likewise, it's proper to say: "I profess to be an Advocate of Love." But it's not proper to say: "I am an Advocate of Love." Only other people are capable of determining if you're a true Advocate of Love, and that's because they can reasonably judge the fruits of your love.

If I don't achieve my personal dream of this book being a success, then that's fully acceptable to me. I cast my fate upon the wind, and where fate blows my efforts, then that's where fate has taken me. For this I am confident. It's a far, far better thing to have tried and failed than to not have tried at all. After all, all I really have to offer you is the sincerity of my personal convictions. However, personal convictions are a dime a dozen and few people really care about another person's convictions. Hence, I sense I'm just a whisper in the wilderness where mighty prophets yell and scream for your attention. How can my whisper be heard over the clanging of the mighty prophets? On the other hand, one who truly pursues the truth shall strain an ear just to hear a whisper of truth.

### **Have I Helped You**

My friends, I hope your efforts in reading this book have been worthy of your investment. It has been my intent and desire to speak to the heart of your very existence. Have I helped you in your journey to better understand the principles of love?

Have I enhanced and expanded your perspective of love, life and death? I truly hope so.

Have I helped you find a gracious and benevolent resting place for your mind to dwell at the moment of your terrestrial death? This would surely be a good thing to do.

Have I assisted you in building up your confidence in the belief of the world-to-come and your pending celestial birth? I wish for you to have a very happy, happy celestial birthday.

Have I tenderly touched your mind so it has lead you to a life of hope? If I have, then I am highly satisfied.

Reid Collier

Have I gently stroked your soul so it has guided you to a life of faith? If I have, then I have accomplished a mighty deed.

And have I cast a soothing whisper to you so it slightly opened a door to your heart and the Spirit of Truth rushed in, and thereby a life of love has been actualized? If I have, then the desire of my life has been fulfilled.

If I could know I have done these things, then I shall die a very contented man.

*I hope you have found some  
satisfaction in reading this book.*

*I look forward to the paths of  
our minds crossing once again.*

*Choose to be an AoL and help  
fulfill love's great mission.*

*To all my friends I say,  
let's **Luv & Liv** forever.*

*The sincerity of my love I give to all.*

HSG to all!

Reid Collier













## **Please consider the following questions.**

**Are you a person of honorable character?**

**Are you a positive, proactive and optimistic person?**

**Do you diligently and consistently exercise true, sincere and genuine love?**

**Are you the kind of person who makes other people happy simply by entering their presence?**

**Have you forged your deep-seated beliefs by your willful exercise of introspective reflections?**

**Do you believe life has meaning, value and purpose that's primarily derived from a spiritual origin?**

**Do you believe the moment of your physical death is also the moment of your celestial birth into the world-to-come?**

**Where shall your mind dwell at the moment of your physical death?**

**If you find yourself interested in these questions, then this book by Reid Collier may help you find a better insight of love and life.**

---

***The Phileo Phoundation***

**Advocate of Brotherly Love**

**Reid Collier, Founder & Sole Proprietor**

**[www.Phileo-Phoundation.com](http://www.Phileo-Phoundation.com)**